James Halstead

Pioneer of Indian Creek
Virginia - West Virginia

By Dee Wheaton
August 1999
This story of the Halstead and related families of West Virginia was researched almost daily for eight years and was written for my children and grandchildren. Originally my intention was to write about Benjamin and his descendants from whom my family descends. However, many people have expressed an interest in our ancestors from whom all West Virginia Halsteads are descended. I started looking for our first ancestor James and as many of his descendants that I could find. Emphasis is on the first three generations of his three sons, John, Amos and Benjamin. Many of the current generation are unknown as we now number in the thousands. I have carried some families up to the present. There may be mistakes as there was no way to verify some information and rather than leave someone out they were mentioned anyway. I regret that I could not find James Halstead in records somewhere before he appeared in West Virginia and have searched many many counties and states. There are still unsolved mysteries.

Most families mentioned in this book descend from early pioneer settlers who lived on or near Indian Creek, Virginia-West Virginia and the counties of Greenbrier, Monroe, Fayette, Summers and Raleigh which were originally parts of Augusta and Botetourt Counties now located in the area of southern West Virginia. Some of the pioneer’s descendents are living in the area, as well as all over West Virginia and the United States.

Throughout the eight years I’ve read miles of microfilmed county and state records and many books. Almost every pioneer who lived in early western Virginia is mentioned in old records. Our James was mentioned nearly a dozen times. Larry Shuck’s books were especially useful; Greenbrier County Deed and Will Records, Greenbrier County Records Vol 2, Personal Property Tax Lists, Greenbrier County Survey Records—Early Court Minutes—Court Record Books, District Court Records of Greenbrier—Kanawha—and Montgomery Counties 1792-1797, District Court Deeds—of Sweet Springs Virginia Court House 1789-1808. (Iberian Publishers, Athens, Georgia).

I gathered hundreds of pictures but could not use most of them because they were too dark, too light or color which does not reprint well in black and white and many were xeroxed or newspaper prints.

I don’t profess to be a writer or good typist and not finding anyone for hire to type a final copy I am using my own typed copy, difficult because I do not own a computer.

Dee Wheeler

Corrections made April-2000.
Registered with Copyright Office—TXU 908-900. Library of Congress.
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Many people were helpful in gathering our family history. Clint Halstead furnished many dates of births, deaths and marriages from his research and took us to the area where the first four generations of Halsteads had settled on Indian Creek, now at Indian Mills, Summers County. My family and I have enjoyed the picnics, finding old cemeteries and Clint's lively conversations for the past six years. We exchanged information that we found and have put the families together, hoping that there are not many mistakes.

Pauline Haga was a world of help and took us to several cemeteries, ordered the government markers for our soldiers and gave me good advice.

Others who helped were John Clark, Mildred Halstead-Aliff, Paul Halstead, Bill and Jo Halstead, Edith Halstead-Lilly, Blanche Halstead-Martin, Lois Halstead-Fawcett, Anne Halstead-Halsey, Edna Halstead-Nowlan, Betty Halstead-Bryant, Ava Clyde Lilly, Winnie Pauley, Carrie Ballard, Eva Pence, Franklin Mann, Dewey Bryyles, Harold Dickson, Carolyn and Kermit Halstead, Eric Lucas, Violet Booth, James Pegram, Joseph Barta, Maxine Calhoun, Linda Powers, Florence Toler, Ike Hunter, Edward Toler, James Kilburn, Marjorie Keatley, Fred Wills, Chalmer Roles, Lacy Hedrick, Elizabeth Wiseman, Juanita and Houston Halstead, Benny Hutchens, Virginia Willis, Theodosia Estep, Daisy Halstead and Tom Halstead, all from West Virginia. From other states were Marlene Neilsen, TX, Cathy Keatley-Garvey, CA, Joe Roles, VA, Joretta Dotson, TX, Marcia Bingham, AR, Marty Halsted-Mays, OR, Jean Roles-Perdue, NC, Robert Halstead, OH, Wayne Halstead, CA, Eva Martin, GA, Norvel Mann, GA, and Robert Wiseman of IN.

Thanks to my husband Jim who took us wherever we wanted to go and for wading through file boxes, climbing through cemeteries and brier patches for several years.

FOR ANITA, CARMEN, ADAM, SHANNA AND KYLE.

August 1999
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER ONE</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beckley, WV Newspaper Article</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beckley Newspaper Article-Soldier to Receive Monument</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The First Halstead's in America</td>
<td>4-7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER TWO</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>JAMES HALSTEAD, Patriot of the American Revolution</td>
<td>8-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The First Soldiers, Some Became Neighbors and Related Families of James</td>
<td>8-21</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER THREE</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Indian Troubles</td>
<td>22-24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Copy of an old sketch of Jacob Mann from Blade Newspaper</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Picture of the old homeplace for three generations of the Mann family</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Map of Quaking Asp Run and the area of the first Halstead farms</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pictures of the area of James farm on Indian Creek, purchased in 1791</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER FOUR</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>JAMES HALSTEAD-Pioneer at Indian Creek, VA</td>
<td>29-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The First Halstead Cemetery at Indian Mills-at James’ Farm</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Written Permission from James for Benjamin to Marry Patience Roles</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Land Transaction between Joseph Sawyers (Scierns) &amp; James-1791, Translated</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER FIVE</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ELIZABETH HALSTEAD-Meeks, Daughter of James</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marriage Bond for Elizabeth and Charles Meeks</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN HALSTEAD and Elizabeth Mann, Son of James</td>
<td>40-43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marriage Bond and Permission for Elizabeth to Marry John</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Children of John and Elizabeth:</td>
<td>45-70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-James (?)</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-Adam and Sarah Greenlee</td>
<td>46-47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Picture of Jacob Halstead, Son of John and the Marriage Bond</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jacob's permission for daughters Rhoda and Flora to marry</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III-Jacob Halstead and Margaret Warren-Halstead's family, of John</td>
<td>50-59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pictures of John and Margaret, of Jacob, of John, of James</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Picture of Will and Ellen, of John, of Jacob, of John, of James</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV-William and Ever Edwards, of John, of James</td>
<td>62-63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marriage Bond and Permission-Sarah Halstead and William Mann, of John</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V-Sarah Halstead and William Mann and family, of John, of James</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI-Rhoda Halstead and Peyton Dobbins, of John, of James</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII-Mann Monroe, of John, of James</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII-Nancy Halstead and Gholson Mann, of John, of James</td>
<td>67-68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX Mary &quot;Polly&quot; Halstead and James Kessinger Jr., of John, of James</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X-Jackson (?) of John, of James</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Pictures of descendents of John and Elizabeth Halstead)</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER SIX</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AMOS HALSTEAD and wife Nancy Ellis, Son of James</td>
<td>71-75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-James and Wife Lucinda Miller, of Amos, of James</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-Joseph and wife Margaret Brown, of Amos, of James</td>
<td>76-78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III-Benjamin and wife Barbara Miller, of Amos, of James</td>
<td>79-80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV-Elizabeth and husband Isaac Miller, of Amos, of James</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER SEVEN
Benjamin Halstead and wife Patience Roles, Son of James

Marriage Bond for Benjamin and Patience Roles
I-Alexander Halstead-wife Emily Keatley, of Benjamin, of James (my family)
Picture of James and Lydia Keatley, parents of Emily Keatley-Halstead
Marriage Bond and permission for Alexander to marry Selena Clark
Marriage Bond and permission for Alexander to marry Emily Keatley

a. Henry, Son of Alexander, of Benjamin, of James Pictures of Alexander's children
Picture of Henry's family-the last reunion
The family by number-the last reunion

b. Selina and husband Christopher Roles, of Alexander of Benjamin
Picture of the home of Mordicai Roles at Indian Creek, about 1863
Pictures of the family of Selina and Christopher Roles

c. James, of Alexander

d. Greenbury and wife Mary Given, of Alexander
Pictures of Green and his descendents

f. William and Nancy Jane Massie, of Alexander

f-1 John R. and wife Margaret Snuffer, of William
f-2 Rosa and Charles Willis, of William and picture

f-3 Charles and wife Cordia Ann Lilly, of William
Pictures of family of Charles and Cordia, of William and Jane

3-1 Tennis, of Charles, of William, of Alexander
3-2 Mason, of Charles, of William
3-3 Mildred Halstead-Aliff, of Charles, of William

3-4 William E., and wife Jo Moodespaugh, of Charles
3-5 Nora Halstead-Atkins, of Charles, of William

3-7 Edna Halstead-Nowlan, of Charles of William
3-8 Paul and Maxine Ellison, of Charles, of William
3-9 Edith Halstead-Lilly, of Charles, of William
3-10 Rubye Halstead-Crooks, of Charles, of William
3-11 Virgie Anne Halstead-Halsey, of Charles, of William

3-12 Charles H. Halstead and Hester Reed, of Charles
3-13 Lois Halstead-Fawcett, of Charles

3-14 Mary Halstead-Rogers, of Charles

Picture of Cordia Marie Lucas, Mary's granddaughter
Continuing with the children of Alexander:

g. Lydia Halstead-Fink, of Alexander  

h. Celia Halstead-Thompson, of Alexander  
i. Emily Burke Halstead-Pauley, of Alexander  
   Picture of Mary Ann Pauley, Daughter of Emily & John Pauley  
   Picture of Emily Keatley-Halstead and daughter Emily’s family

This concludes the family of Alexander and Emily Keatley-Halstead

Continuing with the children of Benjamin and Patience:

CHAPTER EIGHT

II-Mordicai and wife Margaret McClung, of Benjamin, of James  
   Pictures of Mordicai and Margaret McClung-Halstead  
   Pictures of descendents of Mordicai and Margaret Halstead

III-Virginia Elizabeth and Samuel Clark, of Benjamin

IV- Aseneth and Selburn Phillips, of Benjamin  
   Marriage Bond and Permission for Aseneth and Selburn Phillips

V-Lena and Andrew Phillips, of Benjamin (?)  

VI-Leila and Robert Morgan, of Benjamin (?)  
   Marriage Bond for Virginia and Samuel Clark, of Benjamin, of James

VII-Amos, of Benjamin, of James

VIII-Benjamin Jr., of Benjamin, of James

IX-Chloe and George Keaton, of Benjamin

X- Preston and Malinda Phillips of Benjamin

XI-Emily and George A. Mann, of Benjamin and Marriage Bond

XII-Nancy and Caleb Toler, of Benjamin and Marriage Bond  
   Picture of Nancy Halstead-Toler and grandson Dennis and family

XIII-Lorenzo Halstead, of Benjamin, of James

BIBLIOGRAPHY
Mildred Aliff of Mabscott, above, who was born and reared on the Halstead family farm at Whitby, looks over the family cemetery in this 1994 photo. The cemetery dates to 1856.

Dee Ann Wheaton of Columbus, Ga., right, cares for the grave of one of her pioneer ancestors in the family cemetery at Whitby. The daughter of Mildred Aliff, Wheaton is writing a book on the Halstead family.
Halstead family pioneered Raleigh County

Even before Raleigh County was designated as its own territory in 1850, pioneers by the name of Halstead settled on a ridge in Shady Spring district in what is today known as Whitby.

In the 1850 census of Raleigh County, the family was listed as Alexander Halstead, 44, farmer, living with his wife, Emily, 30, and children, Henry, 12, Selina, 10, James, 7, Green, 3, Christopher, 2, and a laborer, Green Roles, 20, lived with the family.

More evidence is the family cemetery in which the earliest grave is recorded as Alexander Halstead's father, Benjamin Halstead, who died in 1856. Alexander Halstead lies beside him and his tombstone reads: Born Nov. 11, 1805 and died March 3, 1870.

I stumbled across that cemetery about 10 years ago in my treks into that area in search of history.

But Dee Ann Wheaton of Columbus, Ga., brought it back to my attention just recently. She is writing a book on the Halstead family. Wheaton is disturbed that there has been no written word of the Halstead family, who were pioneer residents of the area and have received no attribution except a mere mention in the census.

I also have been disturbed for years because when history has been written in the past it appears that only two or three families contributed to the progress of Raleigh County. That is not true, and I have been trying to also change that with my history studies.

And like myself, Wheaton is disturbed because the old cemeteries in which the pioneer families are buried are unkept and some have been cut off from the world by strip mining and other disturbances.

The particular one in which Benjamin Halstead and his son are buried on a high knoll overlooking where once stood a coal tipple can be reached by walking. This past fall, Wheaton and her mother, Mildred Aliff of Mabscott, accompanied by their husbands, went to the cemetery to do some tidy work and placed a rock, taken from Indian Creek where James Halstead, the Revolutionary War soldier, lived. He was the father of Benjamin Halstead and grandfather of Alexander Halstead.

In her research, Wheaton learned that Benjamin was actually born about 1781 in North Carolina, where his father ended up during the Revolutionary War. He settled back later in Indian Creek and paid taxes there in 1787.

According to Wheaton, Benjamin married Patience Roles and they had a large family. One of those sons, Alexander Halstead, came to acquire 1,800 acres of land at an area first known as Piney Creek and Bowyer. Their land later encompassed what was to be the town of Whitby, including the school, company store, post office, coal mines and company houses and land further north to what was called Cal Lilly Mountain or Bowyer Creek.

They had sons in the Civil War, one who died in a prison camp. And another son, William Edward, who married Nancy Jane Massey, lived in a large two-story home at Whitby, Wheaton said. After selling part of their land to Whitby Coal Co., William Halstead and one of his sons, Charles, helped build the coal company houses at Whitby.

And Wheaton said after the coal mine opened at Whitby, William Halstead moved his family further north about two miles up on Bowyer Creek and built a large home, which she described as a "very fine home" with many fruit trees, and a farming area.

Wheaton is quite disturbed because she cannot get to that family cemetery. She said the once beautiful farm is now almost inaccessible and the land has been distorted. She learned that one acre had been set aside by William Halstead for a family cemetery and it was never to be disturbed.

Wheaton and her family are seeking access into that family cemetery so it can be cared for.
It has been a long time coming — almost 182 years, but Revolutionary War soldier James Halstead, and progenitor of thousands, will soon receive his recognition.

One of his descendants, Mildred Aliff of Mabscott, has placed a veteran's monument on his gravesite at Indian Mills in Summers County. Egnor Monument assisted.

When he died in 1815, Halstead was laid to rest in the family cemetery on the family farm.

When the Bluestone Dam was being constructed in the 1940s, the family cemetery was moved to a government plot, along with several other small family cemeteries.

As his final resting place, the monument will be placed at the government cemetery.

Descendants of Halstead moved into Raleigh County prior to its own establishment in 1850 and acquired land in Shady Spring District at what is now known as the Whitby area.

The bronze monument was provided through the National Veterans Monument Service and was a project of Raleigh County historian, Pauline Haga, who is assisting families in marking graves of Revolutionary War and Civil War soldiers.

Aliff, 85, and her daughter, Dee Wheaton of Georgia, will notify descendants of the date of a dedication.
CHAPTER ONE
The First Halsteads in America
During the late seventeen hundreds there were three Halsteads mentioned in western Virginia records. Two were named James. One was a Patriot in the American Revolution. The other James was the pioneer of Indian Creek appearing in Greenbrier County in 1786 or a year or two previously.

Records are scarce for the late 1700's in what is now West Virginia, however, James the pioneer is mentioned nearly a dozen times in some way or another between 1786 and 1815, at which time he disappeared from all records. His youngest son Benjamin became owner of his father's farm in 1815. It is unknown at this time where James came from, his son Benjamin told census takers for years that he was born in North Carolina, 1781. This would have been during the American Revolution and all able bodied men had to serve their time in the war. James must have served some time in the militia.

Mr. Everette Miller of Indian Creek knew of James and wrote in his book, The Miller Family History that "James Halstead was born in England about 1740 and was the father of John Halstead". Considering this to be an accurate statement James would have been about thirty seven when the war began and about seventy five when he died in 1815.

A few years prior to 1786 James Halstead the Virginia Patriot of the Revolution is mentioned in John Gwathmey's Virginian's in the Revolution and is in the Washington archives war records. James the Patriot was a soldier in Col. James Wood's Company and a rifleman in Daniel Morgan's notorious 12th Virginia Regiment. He enlisted March 8, 1777, when Washington gathered his army. Col. Wood's men were gathered from the counties of Berkeley, Hampshire, Dunmore, Augusta and Botetourt. Parts of these counties later became parts of Greenbrier, Monroe, Fayette, Summers etc. In April the 12th Regiment was augmented by some independent companies stationed at Fort Pitt and Fort Randolph. Fort Pitt had been taken previously from the French which was then called Fort Duquense. Fort Randolph was at Point Pleasant. Most of these garrison troops had been in service on the frontier guarding Tygart's Valley and other strategic points on the Ohio River. The 12th Regiment of foot soldiers existed from 1776 to September 1777, then merged with the 8th Virginia Regiment and the 12th ceased to exist. James the soldier is not found in western Virginia records before his enlistment or afterwards unless he was James the pioneer of Indian Creek. I believe they were the same person. Either one could have also participated in the French and Indian wars, perhaps as a young British soldier.

The archive records read that James the soldier enlisted for the duration of the war, indicating a strong feeling of patriotism. His officer in charge was Captain William Vause of Hampshire County. Previously, Col. James Wood, Sr. had made a settlement at Winchester, Virginia with a group of Englishmen. Wood County WV was named for Col. Wood. Several men of the 12th Regiment would settle in the south western part of Virginia after the war, some on or near Indian Creek. (WV became a state in 1863).

Col. Wood along with Col. Daniel Morgan and his riflemen were marching to join General Washington in the spring of 1777 and reached Philadelphia near the end of June or first week of July. Many soldiers and civilians were dying in an epidemic of smallpox at that time. Records show that James was in the Philadelphia General Hospital in July and was inoculated for smallpox. (This was performed by dragging a thread through the sores of an infected person then dragging it through the scratch of the well person, supposedly
making the disease less serious). James was either already sick or injured. He may have carried smallpox scars afterwards. August 11, 1777 James disappeared "deserted" from the hospital. Never collected his pay of six dollars for six months of service.

I found no proof to show where either James came from prior to 1777 or the year of 1786. I presume that James of Indian Creek came from England as Mr. Miller wrote in his book. The two other Halstead families in America at that time came from England, no others are recorded in the late 1700's. Colonial English soldiers who came on ships were not found.

During the first year of research, before knowing the importance of listing the sources I found a brief notice somewhere regarding a James Halstead of Virginia and made a note of it which was "James Halstead in the war of Augusta, 2nd Regiment of Dragoon's, Heth's Detachment". Later when I realized the significance I then researched the Heth's. (Heath's). The following are notes found from old records of the Colonial wars and the Revolution. William, Henry, and Andrew Heath (Heth) were mentioned several times and may have have been of kinship to one another. (Dragoon's were the horse soldiers).

"William Heth was in an independent company stationed at Fort Pitt from 1777 to 1782. Promoted to Lt. Col, 3rd Virginia Regiment, 4-1-1777 and to Col. 4-1778". "William Heth was in service of the 4th, 8th, and 12th Virginia Continental Line. He became a prisoner at Charleston, South Carolina, 1780", during the Revolution.

Daniel Morgan drove a supply wagon early in Braddock's war. Morgan had led the Virginia frontier riflemen to Canada earlier and was forced to surrender. William Heth was on a list of prisoners taken at Quebec, age 26, in Lt. Daniel Morgan's Company, the 11th Virginia Regiment. The Heth's are mentioned several times in Lloyd De Bockstruck's Virginia Colonial Soldiers. Other familiar names he mentioned were Capt. Wm. Vause. William Meek, the Farley's, William, Jacob, John, Charles, Thomas and James Mann. Jacob, John and other Miller's all of whom were noted Indian fighters on the frontier of western Virginia. Earlier, soldiers had come from England, France and other countries to fight in the French and Indian wars. Many fighting for King George III of England stayed and fought later against King George in the American Revolution. I found the above information interesting and think that James the soldier was the same as James the pioneer of Indian Creek. As yet there is no concrete proof but I ordered a bronze marker from the government, mounted it on granite and placed it in the family cemetery of James the pioneer. Free government war markers are a one time gift and no one had ever requested on for either James. James the pioneer was in the war also, somewhere, sometime and there were no records found, making me think the two James were the same man.

The third Halstead mentioned in old Virginia-WV records during the late 1700's was Mathias Halstead who was granted seven thousand acres September 1783. The property was located on the Cheat River near Elkins, Randolph County. Records of Randolph County also show a conveyance of five thousand, four hundred acres to Mathias from Samuel Hanaway in 1787, located on Elk River near Tygart's Valley and Fort Currance. (Huttonsville district) East of Tygart's Valley were the counties of Frederick and Hampshire. James and Mathias may have been of kinship to one another, I found no other proof. They were in the same area around the same time. It appears that Mathias was a land speculator and did not live in Randolph County. (War records record a Mathias Halstead of New Jersey, Brigade Major and Quartermaster in the Continental Army).
The first Halstead families recorded in America was Jonas of New York state and Henry of Norfolk County, Virginia. Both families came to America in the 1600's. Jonas and his descendents are documented and mentioned many times in old records of New York, came from England. Henry Halstead was born 1626, Elizabeth City, Virginia and died May 1658. He was claimed as a son of a New England merchant "Nathaniel". (From Founders of Early American Families-Immigrants from Europe, 1657, by Meredith B. Colker, Jr., A.B. Cum laude, A.M. Litt. D., Phi Beta Kappa, FASE Honorary President, FSAA, FSG, London). LDS Ancestral files record that Henry came from Essex County, England. British microfilms have a list of St. Andrews parishoners located in the ancient town of Halstead of Essex County, England dating back to the 1500's. The film was miniscule and written in old English style. The pages were very old, dirty and too difficult to read.

Henry's descendents spread south and west, some mentioned in Pasquotank and Currituck counties of North Carolina, some attended Quaker meetings. One record dated 1752 shows one James Halstead of Norfolk, witness to a will for William Wilson. Another record: "James Halstead, deceased, will was proved by the oaths of George Williamson and Elizabeth Whitehurst. 1782, John Hodges, Samuel Bartee, Isaac Davis and William Bartee were to appraise the slaves if any, and the personal estate of James Halstead then report to court. (From microfilm records of Princess Ann County of Virginia). Some records in Princess Ann Co., VA, are presumed to be the marriage records of his daughters.

Jonas Halstead of New York has thousands of descendents, some were accountants, doctors, teachers, soldiers, etc., mentioned in old records. During the Revolution one James Halstead of Albany, New York was brought before the Committee of Safety three times and released for lack of evidence. His wife was Susan Miller. Records show that they remained in New York after the war. A New York John and James Halstead are listed as soldiers in Benedict Arnold's Company before Arnold became a traitor. Ann Halstead-Camp dressed as a man and went about town warning that the British had landed, putting her life at great risk. After the war was over she was complimented by General Washington for her bravery at a celebration dinner. The episode is written on her gravestone.

During war times John Halstead of New York sold several horses to the American Army and after the war ended he appeared before the court for payment. The army claimed that most horses had died. John insisted that all were healthy at the time of sale and they had not been properly cared for and their degenerate condition was not his fault. He was reimbursed in land. The descendents of Jonas lived at Albany, Saratoga, Fishkill, Hempstead, New York and have spread throughout the United States. Two of his present descendents have searched their early genealogical records and also the Internet looking for our James and were unable to find either one. They found five James's in the late 1700's but all were located somewhere other than the western part of Virginia-West Virginia and none in North Carolina.

In the early part of this century William Leon Halstead wrote "The Story of the Halsteads of the United States" in which he included many stories and short biographies of the New York people and of other states, as well as mentioning the soldiers. He mentions James Halstead, soldier of the 12th Virginia Regiment of Virginia and nothing else. Doesn't mention James of Greenbrier County, Virginia. He tells of William Stewart Halstead, a famous Surgeon in Chief and Professor of Surgery at John Hopkins University Hospital in Baltimore for thirty years.
An interesting story from Leon’s book was about James Halstead the Pirate who was Captain Kidd’s first mate. Captain Kidd and his men were captured in New Jersey, about 1700. Kidd was taken back to England, tried and hanged in 1700. His body hung in a cage in London until he rotted away into bones. At the time of the capture James and four others were put into a New Jersey jail and requiring three men to transfer James to another jail at Burlington. He escaped and his whereabouts was never known. (Where did he go?) It is doubtful that he went back to England. (There were other Halsteads living in the area).

James had sailed the East Indies with Captain Kidd on the Adventure Galley. Legends are of great wealth buried along the Atlantic coast and are still told today. A story goes that the heirs of John Jacob Astor were later sued by a man named Olmstead who alleged that Astor obtained a large part of Kidd’s treasure illicitly by buying land in Maine where the treasure was hidden, which gave Astor his first riches. The matter was settled out of court.

William Leon Halstead mentions the successes of many, as well as the early military records of some. His book can be found on microfilm #132119, in the Family History Library of the Latter Day Saints for less than five dollars, open to anyone.

Emerging from the Saxon Chronicle is a manuscript researched by Monks of the tenth century, now in the British Museum and records the Halsteads as one of the oldest family names. Analysts found the first records of Halsteads in Essex, England where they were seated from ancient times, some say before the arrival of Duke William at the Battle of Hastings in 1066, when William conquered England and became King. The Saxons were a fair skinned people who settled in England about 400 AD. The family name Halstead emerged as a notable English family name in the county of Essex and were recorded as a family seated with manor and estates in that shire. The family branched to county Suffolk in 1811, later to Kent, Leicestershire, Berkshire and Rowley. Notable at that time was Ralph Halstede of Suffolk. (Hall of Names, Inc.) The Doomsday book records a survey of property and owners of 1085, made by William the Conqueror and lists a number of Halsteads in Essex and Suffolk. Names mentioned were Ralph and Roger de Halstede, Knights, around 1150. (From Ancient History of the surname Halstead).

(The Halstatt's of Halstadt, Germany may have come to England with William the Conqueror in the year 1066 at the battle of Hastings)
CHAPTER TWO

James Halstead, Patriot of the Revolution

Early Soldiers in Western Virginia
James and the Revolution:

Before getting to our family history and James of Indian Creek, I would like to mention the first soldiers and some in the 12th Virginia Regiment and others who made their mark in western Virginia. Some settled in southwest Virginia and some became neighbors of our pioneer ancestor.

Daniel Morgan and his men had previously accompanied Benedict Arnold on the American invasion of Canada 1775-1776 and had also fought earlier with Washington in the French and Indian wars. Arnold who had previously proved himself a man of action had raised a force of one thousand woodsmen and frontiersmen including Daniel Morgan.

In June of 1777, Col. Morgan and his large body of riflemen and Washington's army were progressing to Brunswick near Middlebrook where the road to Philadelphia could be watched. At this time General Howe and the British army of eighteen thousand men were marching to Middlebrook but moved to Staten Island July 1st, about the time Washington received news of Fort Ticonderoga being evacuated and perhaps was captured. July, Washington ordered heavy attachments into Philadelphia. (July was when James the soldier entered the Philadelphia General Hospital). The weather was extremely hot and humid. On the sixteenth of July four of Washington's regiments paraded through Philadelphia accompanied by one thousand drums and fifes including some Pennsylvania militia.

General Howe and Cornwallis landed six miles below the Head of Elk (now Elkton, MD), August 25th and Washington's army was gathered at Wilmington. There was a battle at Chad's Fort and Brandywine Creek. Weedon's Virginia Highlanders and the North Carolina troops were involved and fought until dark at Brandywine. Washington lost twelve or thirteen hundred men killed, wounded or missing. Washington retreated and encamped at German town, moving toward Warwick. The battle at Germantown took place October 4th. At this time the 12th Regiment was so depleted from sickness, death and desertion that the few remaining men were merged into the 8th Regiment and the 12th ceased to exist. A furious quarrel had occurred between General Gates and Benedict Arnold and Arnold was relieved of his command. Being angry and not getting promotions, he became a traitor and joined with the British.

James deserting from the hospital, August 11th 1777, made him a fugitive of the American army and an enemy of the British. The course he took upon leaving the hospital in unknown, no doubt there were others in the same predicament. (There were Halsteads living in Philadelphia at the time). Did James rejoin Morgan or unite with the British or become a prisoner, a Tory or was he a sick man who simply went home? (Where?)

Some Americans were opposed to the war, some were lukewarm to both England and the war. There were stragglers from each and sometimes a whole body united with one or the other side depending on his circumstances. Tory refugee's were men without a country and in Philadelphia, were subject to tar and feathers, resisting meant bayonet wounds and/or the humiliation of being taunted, paraded through town in a cart even though he may be a person of quality. Many Loyalists found refuge back in London, Canada or Nova Scotia. Some just drifted until the war was over.
Patriot deserters were punished severely either shot, hung or given thirty nine crippling lashes on a bare back or running the gauntlet twice. There were many Tories throughout Virginia and North Carolina, some of whom later settled on or near the headwaters of New River. Hundreds of Tory names are mentioned along with suspects in Volume I, Early Adventures on Western Waters by Mary and F. B. Kegley. Many other books mention Tories by name. (no Halstead names were found) The Tories who settled in western Virginia became upright, respected citizens and pillars of their community. The Virginia Legislature passed an act absolving certain persons blamed for quelling insurrections of Tory uprisings. One name mentioned was Charles Lynch who in his own way created the Lynch Law. (Statutes at Large by Hening).

The year of 1777 was called the year of the bloody three sevens. Many lives were claimed by disease and war. Some known dead in William Vause's company were Joseph Reilly, died June 1777, John James died June 6th, Peter Prouse was sick at Morristown, John Scott was sick in Philadelphia, August 1777. Others in the 12th were Capt. Hugh Wallace who died of smallpox in Philadelphia, August 1777. Pvt. William Ellis died July 1777, John Hamilton was sick at Mendon, June 1777 and died August 3, 1777, all men of the 12th. No doubt there were hundreds more who are unknown. The war eventually moved south into the Carolina's with some later battles being fought at Hannah's Cowpens and a victory of the Americans was gained at Kings Mountain, North Carolina and Daniel Morgan's men being hero's.

Before the American Revolution General Braddock had sailed from London with two Regiment's, the 44th Royal British Infantry for the sole purpose of recovering Fort Duquense (Fort Pitt) from the French. He arrived at Chesapeake Bay February 20, 1755 and disembarked at Alexandria, proceeded through Fredericktown, MD and marched through the counties of Berkeley, Jefferson, Frederick and Hampshire to Little Cacapon. After crossing the Potomic they were back at Fort Cumberland,MD. They were joined by nine companies of Virginia (WV) Rangers and independent companies from North and South Carolina, New York and Maryland. They started toward Fort Duquense on July 8th when suddenly deadly fire poured upon them from eight hundred French and Indians hidden in the dense forest. The battle continued until seven hundred and eighty one soldiers were killed or wounded including the death of General Braddock. The approximate four hundred twenty left returned to Fort Cumberland, some returned to their homes in Virginia and to Philadelphia. There are no complete lists of men who were there at the time. Andrew Lewis and George Washington were two of the young Virginians accompanying Braddock. One soldier wrote in his journal that Braddock crossed one body of water nineteen times in the two miles around Hampshire county. Braddock was lost and would not listen to Washington or anyone making suggestions. George Washington a young soldier of twenty three had joined Braddock at Fredericksburg. Two horses were shot from under him. Audley Paul and Christian Baumgardner's companies from western Virginia took part in the battle. (Preston Papers, Vol. II)

Some familiar names of frontier soldiers were Captain Andrew Lewis, John Campbell, Boude Estill, John Miller, John Kincaid, George Gwinn, William and James Phillips, John Hall, Jacob, Abraham and Phillip Parsinger, Peter and John Wiley, John Clark, Thomas Scott, Thomas Galbreath, John Pence, James Ratliff, William Christian, Thomas Miller, Alexander Sayer (Sawyers) Capt. John Mercer, George Moffitt, John McClung and Francis Farley. These men were in service on the frontier before, during or after and some probably took part in the battle of Fort Duquense. (Braddock's war at Fort Duquense has been portrayed in several films).
The military establishment of Virginia consisted of four Divisions, Major General Daniel Morgan, Commander. The 79th Regiment in Greenbrier County, 80th in Kanawha, 108th later in Monroe. The 55th and 67th were the Sixtieth Brigade, General William Darke of Berkeley County, Commander. The Indian tribes of Virginia at that time were Shawnee, Miami, Delaware, Wyandotte, Mingo and Ottowa’s.

The names of General Morgan, Col. James Wood, Daniel Boone, Stuart, Arbuckle, McCullogh, Caperton, William Crawford and many others will live in history and the thousands who were just as great whose names are lost in the oblivion of the past and lost records. All were instrumental in getting our country started. Most were fearless and were expert marksmen who made their first bullet hit its mark. These men from Greenbrier, Monroe and surrounding counties who took part in the Revolution and fought the Indians on the frontier were our ancestors and fifth great grandfathers. Several lived on Indian Creek and in Monroe County and were acquainted with each other. Their descendents intermarried. Some of ours were Francis and Drewry Farley, Josiah Meadows, Francis Keatley, James Halstead and Joseph Wiseman, Jacob Mann and Jacob, John and Henry Miller.

Soldiers of south Western Virginia of early times were frontier militia, Indian fighters and soldiers of the Revolution, many served in all. Hundreds were taken as prisoners whose fate was never known. Many were killed by the Indians and were never known.

The following encapsulated biographies were gathered from family histories, pension applications, and many books about the Revolution and early wars. The pension applications tell of their lives on the frontier, encounters with Indians and early settlements. They suffered many hardships, losses and showed great endurance and bravery. Every able bodied man served in some capacity on the frontier and/or in the Continental Line of Virginia. Few received a pension because by 1818 they were old and could not remember places, dates or their officer’s names and had lost their papers. After the war a migration westward began into the territory opened by George Rogers Clark. Then his brother William Clark and Meriwether Lewis ventured past Missouri into uncharted lands westward to the Pacific and making maps. It’s been said that western Virginia was the cradle of the westerners.

General Daniel Morgan born 1737, was George Washington’s right hand man. They both were in Braddock’s war where Daniel was wounded. Captain Morgan had led his Virginia riflemen with Col. Benedict Arnold on the Canada expedition where he became a prisoner. Daniel was a giant of a man from Winchester, Virginia who had a friendly disposition, understanding mind, strong temper and was a natural leader. He had been a frontier waggoneer who carried scars on his back from a beating he took for striking a British officer at Fort Chiswell in his younger days, consisting of four hundred and ninety nine lashes. He was appointed Colonel of the 11th Virginia Regiment which was filled largely with men from the eastern panhandle counties, now in West Virginia. He became Brigadier General of the Continental Army October 1780 and served to the end of the war. He and his sure shot Virginians took part in the battles at Monmouth, NY, Kings Mountain and especially at Cowpens receiving thanks from Congress. After suffering so many hardships, losses and accomplishments, Daniel retired to his home in Frederick County with many physical disorders. He was married to Abigail. He died in 1802 and is buried at Winchester, Virginia. They had no children.

Colonel James Wood, Jr., born 1741, died in Richmond 1813. He was a Captain in Dunmore’s war of 1774 and Colonel of the 12th Virginia Regiment and the 8th Regiment in November of 1776. He became Brigadier General and was one of the Commissioner’s that made the treaty at Fort Pitt. Col. Wood was galant in his service defense of the frontier against the Indians
as well as the cause for freedom. His regiments fought at Brandywine, Germantown and Monmouth. He was superintendent in charge of all prisoners of the war. He resigned his commission in 1784. He was married to Jean Moncure of Stafford County, Virginia. They had no children. His father was James Wood, Sr., who had settled the town of Winchester with a group of Englishmen. Frederick county included counties now known as Rockingham, Shenandoah, Jefferson, Berkeley, Morgan, Hampshire and part of Page and Hardy.

General Andrew Lewis and his brothers fought in the Indian wars and Andrew was appointed Commander of the southern division which included volunteers and draftee's of Virginia who participated in Braddock's war. He joined the expedition of Col. Henry Boquet out into Indian country and succeeded in bringing the Mingo, Shawnee and Delaware to terms. His brother Charles escorted prisoners taken by the Indians back to Fort Pitt, many of whom had been seized from Greenbrier, New River, James, Jackson, Roanoke and Holston rivers in preceeding years. Andrew led the army to Point Pleasant where the great battle was fought with Chief Comstock, October 10, 1774. His brother Charles was killed. Andrew commanded at Williamsburg and drove Dunmore from Gwynn's Island. Andrew lived on or near the Holston River, in the community of Mendota north of the Holston about ten miles west of Bristol near Scott and Washington counties. At one time Washington County, north of the Holston was Sullivan County, North Carolina. Later that part of North Carolina was divided to become Sullivan County, Tennessee and Washington County, Virginia. (Washington County records were burned in a fire). Andrew was a respected stern leader and developed a credible militia in western Virginia. He married Miss Givens of Augusta county. He was buried on his estate "Dropmore" near Salem, Roanoke County.

George Rogers Clark was a tall red haired man with sparkling black eyes, twenty four years old in 1777. He was a surveyor of western lands, commissioned Lt. Col. in 1778. That summer he set out with one hundred seventy five frontiersmen from the falls of the Ohio for Kaskaskia on flatboats and surrounded the town and took the fort without firing a shot. In February, wading through freezing water shoulder deep and suffering many hardships took Fort Sackwell, Chokia and Vincennes claiming the surrounding territory which was larger than the thirteen colonies. His brother William and Meriwether Lewis planted the American flag on the Pacific shore and returned about 1806.

Captain William Vause enlisted January 8, 1777 and was a Company Officer of the 12th Virginia Regiment and was James Halstead's officer in charge. Vause's company was designated the 8th, September 14, 1778 because of depletion due to sickness, death and desertion. William retired February 12, 1781 as a Lt. Colonel and was awarded four thousand acres in Hampshire county.

Earlier Ephriam Vause had built a fort near Shawsville and patented land there. During the French and Indian wars his fort was sacked June 24, 1756 and his wife and two daughters were made prisoners. Levice Vause returned years later with tales of seeing scalps of members of her family hanging in a tree. Ephriam and his son being away at the time were not captured. Two years later Ephriam sold his land and moved out of the country. Ephriam and Captain William Vause are listed in Burgess's book of Virginia soldiers in Hampshire county, 1793. Captain Vause's children were William, Thomas, Solomon, Jerimiah and Theodosia. Vause has been written as Vaulx, Vaux and Vass.
Alexander Clark, son of James and Elizabeth Summers Clark was born 1736 and died 1794. He married Sarah Lafferty (Laverty) and lived just below the covered bridge on Indian Creek. His three brothers James, John and Samuel served in the battle at Point Pleasant, Captain Arbuckle’s Company of sixty men and many others whose names are not known. Alexander was an Indian fighter with Captain Audley Paul on the Ohio River and they were involved in a fight with Indians on an island at New River and Indian Creek earlier.

Alexander Clark II was born 1775 and died 1847, was married to Mary Hawkins. He was a soldier in the war of 1812, Captain Andrew Nickell’s Company, 4th militia. They lived on Indian Creek just below Indian Mills where the Blue Stone hunting and fishing area and manager’s office is located today. They were parents of twelve children. Their son Samuel married Virginia Elizabeth Halstead, the daughter of Benjamin Halstead. Their daughter Selenah married Alexander Halstead, son of Benjamin Halstead.

John Clark enlisted in the Confederate army 1861 at the age of sixteen. He was a sharpshooter in Morton’s company of Edgar’s Battalion. He took part in the battles at Fayetteville, Pearisburg, Lewisburg, Droop Mountain, Dry Creek and the battle of the wilderness. He was taken prisoner at Cold Harbor June 2, 1864 and spent the balance of the war in a northern prison camp. John lost nearly one hundred pounds while in prison and earned the Southern Cross at Fayetteville. John married Lucinda Harmon also Mary Mays and was the grandfather of John Clark of Fayetteville.

Captain Matthew Arbuckle was a woodsman and soldier whose exploits played an important part in the early settlement of Lewisburg and Greenbrier County. He was born 1741 in what is now Botetourt county and was one of the earliest white men to explore the Greenbrier region where he roamed as a hunter and trapper. He joined the Virginia militia in 1758 and soldiered throughout his life and is remembered for his role in the Battle at Point Pleasant. That year the militia assembled at Camp Union (Lewisburg) under the command of General Andrew Lewis for whom the town was later named. The militia numbering about eleven hundred men marched one hundred six seven miles to Point Pleasant on the Ohio river where they defeated the Shawnee led by Chief Cornstalk. Arbuckle commanded a militia company and served as chief scout and guide. After a lifetime of dangerous adventures he was killed by a falling tree limb during a storm in 1781. A memorial stone erected by the Federal Government erected in Section C-4 of the Lewisburg cemetery honors his memory and lies next to the graves of his sons Charles and James.

Augustus Comer enlisted in Shenandoah county on Easter Monday, 1776. He was in the 12th Virginia Regiment by 1781 under Captain Langdon and Col. Neville. He was with Neville in battles of Brandywine, Germantown, Monmouth and Stony Point. He marched to Charleston, South Carolina, was taken prisoner and escaped. He was born in Frederick County 1757 and was married to Catherine Rush. They settled at Lindside, Monroe County. Augustus received a pension of eight dollars a month in 1819 for four years service. His discharge was signed by General Scott.

James McDade was born 1749 and died 1833. Enlisted from Hampshire county under Capt. William Vause of the 12th Virginia Regiment, commanded by Col. James Wood in General Scott’s Brigade. Was involved in battles at Trenton, Brandywine, Germantown, Monmouth, Etaw Springs and Camden. He received a bayonet wound thrust through the body and a sword wound on the wrist and a bullet in his ankle. His will was filed in Jackson county and his wife was Margaret. James (Charles) McDade is buried in Mason Co. Pleasant Flats, Robinson Dist.
Samuel Clark was born in Augusta County April 18, 1764 and died in Monroe County January 27, 1857. Samuel and his comrade Berryman Jones were in battle at Jamestown under Patrick Buckanan and in the border campaign against Indians in Tygart's Valley under John Mc Kitric. He was in Yorktown at the capture of Lord Cornwallis. Received a pension and one hundred, sixty acres. His pension records detailed much of his service. Entered 1780 and served three months in Captain Samuel Mc Cutcheon's company, three months in Captain Trimble's company of Col. Sampson Matthews regiment. He was involved in a skirmish with the British near Portsmouth, wounded in the head by a British sabre in the battle of Jamestown and in a hospital for several months. Served three months in the companies of Captain's Long and Campbell. Guarded prisoners at Winchester after the British surrendered. His last service of three months was in Tygart's Valley against the Indians. Samuel married Margaret Handly and settled in Greenbrier County, 1786. He helped form Monroe County in 1799 and was County Judge in 1816.

Jonathan Roach was born in Rockingham County, Virginia 1761, died in Monroe County 1832. He enlisted in the 12th Virginia Regiment, Orange County and served as a guard for prisoners captured with General Burgoyne at Saratoga. Served two years under Col. Taylor and was discharged May of 1781. He gave his discharge to Nathaniel Mills with any claim to bounty land. Later in 1781 he substituted for James Craig in Rockingham County under Col. Samuel Lewis and marched through Charlottsville, Richmond, Williamsburg to Yorktown where he was discharged. Christian Peters, Jacob and Matthew Meadows certified that they had seen Roach in service. Other data filed in his behalf was by Benjamin Hostead and Matt Maddy. (Is this a clue that would tie the two James Halstead's? James, the Patriot was also in Vause's Company). Jonathan married two times, to Margaret See also Ruth Meadows. His children were William, Elijah, Reuben, John, Margaret, Nancy, Rebecca, Rhoda, Rachel, Leatha, Caty, Mary, Lantz and Isaac. Jonathan lived at the upper end of Barger Springs.

Christian Peters was born in Rockingham County, Virginia, 1760. He enlisted June 1779 under Captains Craven and Jeremiah Beasley and served as a Pvt., Capt., and Sergeant in the Virginia Continental Line. He was with Major Jack Willis, General's Green, Morgan and Campbell and in battles at Cowpens, Hot Water and Jamestown. He took part in capturing Tories in the Black Swamp of North Carolina. Carried his rifle, tomahawk and butcher knife. The town of Peterstown, WV is named for him.

Francis Keatley was a frontier soldier and was with Col. Moffett's Company, Augusta County. Moffett's Company was with General Green in the Carolina's. Francis was an immigrant from Donegal, Ireland. His wife was Elizabeth. His son James lived on Indian Creek at Indian Mills. James wife was Lydia Sovain, daughter of Abraham and Lydia Sovain. James and Lydia were parents of Emily Keatley who was married to Alexander Halstead, second great grandparents of the writer.

Joseph Van Meter enlisted 1776 from Hampshire County and served two years as a Sergeant then Ensign under Lt. Hite and Williams. He was with Captain William Vause and Neville in the 12th Virginia Regiment. Had service in battles of Brandywine, Germantown, Monmouth and Bluefield. He was granted a pension in 1834, Hardy County.

John Wyatt, (Walt) 12th Virginia, born in London, England 1748, was a resident of Botetourt County, VA. Enlisted 1778 in Capt. Crockett's Co, Abraham Bowman's Regt. Was in Battle of Monmouth 1778. Re enlisted in Capt. Steads Co. of Col. Heth's Regt. Captured by British at Charleston, SC, and a prisoner for six months. Volunteered under Col. Campbell, served two months at Yorktown, mustered out one week after the surrender of Cornwallis. Received a 100 acre landgrant in Mercer, County, WV.
James Larkin was in the 4th, 12th and 8th Virginia Regiment's A Pvt. under Captain William Bowyer and Col. Neville in General Scott's Brigade. Received fifty acres of land in Monroe County for service which adjoined that of J. P. Scott, James Dunsmore and Christopher Hoke. He had no family, owned one rifle, shot pouch, tomahawk, butcher knife, saddle, saddlebags, three pocket knives and a razor.

James Ellison of Crump's Bottom lived opposite the mouth of Indian Creek presently in Summers County. He served as a spy with a companion ranger from 1776 to 1781, usually for seven months a year except 1779 when a longer tour prevented him from raising his corn crop for the support of his family. His pay was five shillings a day. In his application for pension-1834, he describes the 1778 tour of exploring the country between Indian Creek, New River and Sewell mountain. The Indians took him prisoner on one occasion about fifteen miles beyond the top of Bluestone mountain and after dark he stopped pretending to tie his moccasin, permitting those ahead to get some distance. He then ran down a steep hill and after being pursued for about half a mile he escaped and returned to the fort. James Ellison Sr., was born in Sussex County, New Jersey 1735, migrated to New River and Hays Creek in 1771.

The Ellison's were noted spinners and one house held only looms, spinning wheels, cards and spindles. One loom had twenty two treadles necessary for double weave coverlets. (Golden Seal). There are other stories about Ellison's and Farley's and their trouble with Indians written in other books.

Daniel Boone was living in Kanawha County from 1792 to about 1794 and for a time was commissary for the militia. Hugh Caperton and his company of volunteers were affiliated with Boone who was to provide provisions for the support of Caperton's men. Caperton complained of having to purchase and supply the men himself and after a disagreement with Boone, Daniel quit and complained that "Caperton wasn't to his liking". Daniel Boone moved to Missouri about 1800. At first there was no court. He officiated as a Justice of the Peace. In one case which involved James Meeks and Bery Vinzant, Meeks bit off a piece of Vinzant's ear during a fight between the two. Meeks was vindicated by Boone.

Isaac Foster enlisted in the 12th Regiment under Col. James Wood for three years. He was in the battle at Point Pleasant under Captain Matthew Arbuckle. Received a one hundred acre grant in Monroe County.

Valentine Cook was the son of John Hamilton Cook of London, cousin to the celebrated Captain Cook. The Cook's came to the J. R. Johnson place in 1770 below Greenville and built Cook's Fort. Valentine Sr., had several encounters with the Indians and was captured several times. He died in 1797 and his widow went with sons Henry and David to Kentucky. Valentine Jr. and Jacob were Ministers and the latter died on the family homestead in 1844. Rev. Jacob Cook married many couples in Monroe County including Elizabeth Halstead to Charles Meeks. (Elizabeth and Charles disappeared from all WV records in 1803) Rev. Valentine Cook settled in Kentucky.

Captain George Moffett was born 1735, Augusta County and died 1811. His wife was Sarah McDowell, their children were born at Rockbridge, VA. George was with Col. Dickinson in the battle at Point Pleasant. He and his men guarded the frontier against Indians at Clover Lick, 1774. They helped build Warwick's fort 1774, at the forks of Deer Creek near Greenbank in Pocahontas County.
Moffett became Col. at some point and was with General Green in the Carolina's during the Revolution. Col. Moffett was buried at Shepherdstown.

John Bradshaw at age seventy four declared that he was eighteen in 1776 and volunteered as a spy and was a Pvt. in Capt. John Henderson's Company 1777, 1778 and 1779. His duties were to leave Cook's Fort on Indian Creek with his companion, usually James Ellis or Col. Samuel Estill and took stands at the gaps and low places between William Lafferty's at New River and head waters of Laurel Creek. He met with spies from Burnside's Fort and traveled the waters of Big and Little Stoney Creek, the Indian Draft of Indian Creek and Wolf Creek. He was drafted in 1780 and was in the siege of Yorktown when Cornwallis surrendered, then guarded the prisoners to Winchester. He died in 1835.

Patrick Boyd was born in England about 1759, died in Monroe County 1835. He enlisted 1777 in Augusta County and was at Valley Forge 1778 also at West Point, Middlebrook and Bondbrook. Was sick in camp at Monmouth and received a discharge. Volunteered 1781 and congregated at Waynesboro under Col. Moffett and marched to North Carolina and was in the battle at Guilford Courthouse. Volunteered again and marched to Charlottesville under Col. Bowyer then on to Richmond. Was discharged at Hickory Nut Church. Married to Ann Mc Dowell.

James Boyd of Monroe County served in the Virginia Continental Line. Was in battles at Germantown, Monmouth, Brandywine and Kings Bridge. His wife Flora.

Josiah Meadows came from Bedford County and served two or more times on the frontier against the Indians and was in the American Revolution. He enlisted in the spring of 1778 under Captains Renfroe and marched with the company to Jarret's Fort on Wolf Creek where the Company was divided and he being sent to Keeney's Fort where he was stationed at the time of the attack on Donnelly's Fort. After the expiration of his term he again enlisted in Captain Taylor's Company and a Regiment commanded by Col. John Montgomery, then marched through the Holston country fighting back the Indians from the frontier which was along the Blue Ridge and Cumberland mountains to Indian town of Chicamauga which they destroyed. He was with a portion of the army that had charge of British prisoners captured at Yorktown and helped convey prisoners to Fredericksburg. Josiah took part in George Rogers Clark's expedition. In his later years Josiah was a Baptist Minister and organized the church at Bluestone which was a double log cabin with a dirt floor, the church is there today. Josiah married Juda Lilly and lived at Bluestone. He was the great grandfather of Hon. R. G. Meador of Mercer County and great grandfather of Cordia Ann Lilly-wife of Charles Halstead. (Grandparents of the writer)

Francis Meadows born 1754, died 1836. He enlisted February 1777 from Augusta County and served under Captain's Lair and Lambin, 10th Regiment commanded byCols., Wood, Green and Wheaton. He was made a prisoner by Lord Cornwallis at Charleston, South Carolina for fifteen days and escaped to report to Col. James Wood. He was married in the fall of 1790 or 1791 to Frances Bush. He received a pension in Monroe Count. They were parents of sixteen children, twelve being sons. Supporting data was given by Jonathan Roach, Elizabeth Fisher and Henry Maggart.

Henry Arnot was born in Orange County, NY in 1761. He enlisted at age fourteen, 1776. Was in Col. Nichol's Regiment and marched through New Jersey and New York, discharged at Albany, NY. He lived on Laurel Creek and applied for pension in Monroe County.
John Cook was born in London, England about 1754. He applied for pension September 1832, at age seventy eight. He declared that he enlisted into the militia January 1777, 12th Regiment commanded by Col. James Wood in the company of Captain Langdon. He was in battles at Monmouth, Stony Point and an engagement near the house of Col. Phillips above New York. He was discharged from a company commanded by Captain Abraham Hite, signed by Col. Webb. He received a warrant for one hundred acres.

While in England John and a girl friend named Nellie Pemberton were on their way to school in London and heard music coming from a ship in the harbor and decided to go aboard to hear better being unaware that the ship was putting out to sea. They arrived in America and having no money became indentured to a plantation owner who paid the Captain for their trip. They married and settled in the Shenendoa Valley.

Following his service in the Revolution he moved his family to Montgomery County, Virginia. While living there he was in several excursions against the Indians. John and his family settled in Wyoming County in 1799 at the bottom of the mouth of Laurel Creek. Nellie died 1812. John later remarried to Ann Keatley-Hendrix, a widow. John died November 21, 1832. Ann filed a claim for John's pension August 1853 and received eighty dollars a year. When John settled in Wyoming County there were still wigwams in the valley.

Christian Snidow was a Giles County resident, entered service 1776 as a volunteer under Captain McCorkle and Lt. Lucas. He marched to Watauga in Tennessee against the Indians. Was stationed at Knoxville three or four weeks and returned home. He was again drafted and marched to Wood's fort on Rich Creek under the command of Captain Burk. Lt. Patton and Ensign McMullen. They ranged from Woods fort to Cole River and was discharged after three months. Drafted again and stationed at Culbertson's Bottom defending the frontier from Shawnee Indians and then was discharged. He was ordered to service by Col. Preston and marched to North Carolina to guard a Moravian town at Salem. He joined Col. William Campbell and marched to Haw Fields and Catawba to hunt Tories. Marched with Col. Preston to the lead mines of Montgomery County (now Wythe) to guard against attack from the Tories. Then he was stationed at Snidow's fort on New River 1779, defending the frontier. Christian was a Lt. in 1781 of a company at Pearis fort on New River. He died in 1836 at age seventy six.

Joseph Swinney applied for a pension at age eighty two in Monroe County, 1820. He enlisted about 1775 or 1776 under Captain Thomas Hudgens of the 6th Virginia Regiment. He marched with Washington through Philadelphia, New Jersey back and forth for about a year and was discharged in Philadelphia because he was sick and not fit for battle. He was a carpenter by trade. Had no wife or children and lived with his brother.

John Stuart was a Captain in Greenbrier County and was born about 1750. He commanded a company of militia under General Andrew Lewis who led his men to aid in the attack at Donnelly's fort. He and his men were in the battle at Point Pleasant. He and Captain Arbuckle witnessed the killing of Chief Cornstalk, Red Hawk, Constalk's son Elinipsico and were threatened at gunpoint should they try and prevent the killing. Captain Stuart married John Frogg's widow. John was a county clerk of Greenbrier County. His office was a one room stone building on his property which still stands, about four miles south of Lewisburg. (It was in this one room office that Stuart drew up the handwritten land transaction between James Halstead and Joseph Sawyers-Siers in 1791).
Joseph Wiseman applied for a pension in Monroe County August 22, 1832 at age seventy three. He entered service under the following officers and served as stated in his own words. He was drafted into the first militia out of Berks County, PA., commanded by Captain Thomas Perry in August 1776, Col. Mark Bird being the Commander of the Regiment. He marched from Berks County to Philadelphia, took to water and sailed to Trenton, from Trenton taken by land through Princeton, Burlington, Elizabethtown and crossed the Hackensack River to Bergantown where he remained until the first of November to when his draft expired. He was taken to Philadelphia by Captain T. Perry where he received a discharge which he lost. He moved to Rowan County in October 1777 where his grandfather lived. About August of 1778 he volunteered in a company commanded by Captain Nickell (Nichols) and Lt. Chapman then marched to Mechenburg County where he was under the command of Col. Lock and General Rutherford then marched to Camden South Carolina then on to Etaw Springs on the Santee River, from there to Dorchester on the Ashley River and to Puresburg on the Savannah River. He marched on to a place called Two Sisters where he joined General Ashe's army and less than an hour of his defeat they covered the retreat of Ashe's army across the Savannah river and returned to Two Sisters, Puresburg, Camden and Salisbury in Rowan County, NC. He arrived in May and received his discharge from Captain Nichols for nine months service. He has since lost his discharge from Captain Nichols for nine months service. In July 1779 he substituted in Rowan County and marched to Mechenburg County, was discharged and returned home, waited three months and having no further call he moved back to PA and from there to Washington County, MD. While he lived there one man out of every nine were drafted. He and eight neighbors hired a substitute which they gave five pounds to take their place.

He moved from MD to Rockingham and after ten years about 1791, moved to Greenbrier County (now Monroe) where he has since resided. Signed by Christy and Charles Keenan. He received forty dollars per anum. Joseph and his wife Elizabeth Bateman passed their closing years in Monroe County near Indian Creek. They were parents to James, Isaac, Elizabeth, Samuel, Owen, Rachel, Sarah, Edith, Margaret, Joseph and Thomas. They were the ancestors of Dema Wiseman-Aliff through Owen. Owen's son Robert and Roberts son James was the grandfather and father of Dema Wiseman-Aliff-grandmother of the writer.

John Wiseman at age seventeen was at Valley Forge with Washington's army, then on to Monmouth, Cherry Valley, Stony Point and Yorktown. He was born in Berk's County PA August 18, 1760. Served in the Continental Line and Westmoreland County militia. Listed in the archives of PA as a ranger of the frontier 1778-1783. After the war he went with his father's family to Rockingham County, VA. About 1818 he left Virginia with most of his large family traveling a wilderness for three hundred miles to Fairfield County, OH. He settled a few miles from Lancaster. A year later he moved to a farm in Perry County near New Salem and he died there January 22, 1842. He was commissioned a Minister by Bishop Asbury in Virginia. He married Sarah Green and their children were Elizabeth, Mary, Margaret, Ann, Green, John, Ray, Isaac, Sarah, Charles and William Tecumseh.

John Canterbury was born in Augusta County, 1761. He volunteered in Montgomery County to guard the frontier at the Clinch River and Blackmore station. Served on the Bluestone and substituted for Samuel Douglas at Logan's Station, KY. He volunteered under Captain Joseph Martin against the Indians, marched to the Indian towns and involved in several skirmishes, killed some and took prisoners. Substituted for David Renfroe and marched under Col. Campbell to the Santee River where he joined General Marion's army where they took eighty prisoners and sent them to Camden. He remained until Cornwallis surrendered. John settled in Monroe County about 1784.
William Mann was a Sergeant at Fort Young in 1759, (Covington) and lived at Falling Spring. He was a hunter, trapper and weaver. He was hired by Israel Christian in 1766 as a hunter and trader and paid fifty pounds a year for his services. His will proved November 1778 names his wife Jean and children; Moses, Thomas, William, John, Catie, Jenny, Sarah and one yet unborn. Jean (Jane) Mann’s will mentions children; John, Alice, Jane, Sarah, Moses, and Archibald.

Mann’s fort was at Covington at the mouth of Falling Spring. A council held at Staunton in 1756 deemed that the fort was properly protected by the garrison there.

William Mann’s sons Moses, Thomas and William were soldiering on the Ohio after the battle of Point Pleasant and stationed at Bellville. On May 17th, 1794 Thomas and William left Bellville on a hunting trip and while crossing the Ohio near Rough Creek were killed by a band of Indians thought to be the same band who had attacked Fort Harmer (Marietta) earlier in May. Afterwards, Captain Clendenin of Fort Lee (Charleston) wrote Lt. Mann insisting that Bellville must have attention. Moses Mann refused to carry out orders and questioned the authority of Clendenin. Captain Clendenin wrote again June 3rd 1794, expressing his concern at the unhappy loss of his two brothers and “shall continue to repeat my instructions to you until I am otherwise directed”. Col. Tom Lewis at Point Pleasant took up the dispute and wrote Governor Lee June 19, 1794 informing him “if Lt. Mann shall be obliged to obey orders from Clendenin — Mann would quit the service and every man he brought on would immediately return home at the resignation of Lt. Mann. Lt. Mann as an officer has always adhered to instructions from Col. Steele and has advised and consulted with me on all occasions until Capt. Clendenin interfered with his command” (WV History, A Quarterly Magazine, Vol. IX).

John Mann acquired land on the James, Jackson and Cowpasture rivers from 1750 to 1778 at which time he died. Moses Mann acquired thirty acres from his father John in 1778. Moses married Rebecca Lewis January 29, 1795 in Rockingham County.

(The Mann family appears to have been situated on the James River near Falling Spring and Covington preceding their move to Greenbrier County (later Monroe). The same family names were handed down through several generations. One Moses Mann signed his name as the surety bondsman in the marriage of William Mann and Sarah Halstead in 1825, Monroe County, Virginia.

Jacob Mann, Jr., married Mary Kessinger August 24, 1779 and raised seven sons and three daughters. Jacob was a blacksmith and Indian fighter, having several encounters with the Indians. He built a powder mill and made powder by mixing sulphur from the Carolina’s, charcoal from willow wood and saltpeter from the Maddy caves which he owned at the time.

Jacob’s name was on William MCBride’s payroll for service in 1782 at the Ohio Falls and also on the payroll of Captain Charles Gatlift’s company in 1783 who were called out by Lt. Bowman from August to November. (From Register of Virginian’s in the Revolution by William Gwathmey). Jacob was a large landowner on Indian Creek. A William Mann was killed in the battle of Little Big Horn with General Custer.

From Persons Naturalized in the Province of Pennsylvania 1740 to 1773, Pennsylvania Archives, Series 2, Vol. II, there was Philip Mann naturalized 3-28-1747, no county listed. Bernard Mans naturalized 9-12-1762, Lancaster County, Henry Mann, naturalized 1762 (Moravian of Philadelphia County), Peter Mann naturalized 4-7-1765 of Philadelphia County, Ulrick Mohn naturalized 9-5-1762 of Berks County and Ludwick Mohn naturalized 9-18-1761 of Berks County.
The Kissingers came to Greenbrier-Monroe County 1770. Mathias, Andrew, Sr., Andrew Jr., were in the battle at Point Pleasant. Andrew and Mathias are listed in Eckenrode’s Colonial soldiers of Virginia and in Dunmore’s war. Mathias died about 1795 and his heirs were Andrew, Mathias, Mary, Jacob, Susanna, Michael, Elizabeth and Anne who intermarried with the Mann, Maddy, Ballard, Parsons, Fulton (and Halstead) families.

Jacob Miller is listed in Eckenrode’s Colonial Soldiers of Virginia and Hening’s Statute’s at Large. He and Jacob Mann are listed in Crozier’s Virginia Colonial Militia the year of 1758 as well as many other Millers. Jacob was in the Indian wars of Augusta County, Virginia. There are written stories of Jacob Miller and Jacob Mann in skirmishes with the Indians, one being when they recovered the Meeks children from the Shawnee. Jacob’s son, John Miller owned property on Indian Creek and is buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery on Indian Creek. (There were seven Jacob’s Miller who were naturalized in Pennsylvania from February 1740 to September 1770. There was a Millersville near Lancaster, Pa, west of Philadelphia. The Miller family history says that they came from Germany. (Many Millers are listed in ship passenger books who came from England).

Henry Miller was born in Rockingham County in 1764 and he was under Captain Cowger, Col. Nalle and Lt. O. Rourke. He marched to Richmond down the James River to Suffolk below Portsmouth. He was in the 8th, 10th and 14th Continental Line. In 1781 his father and uncles had wagons and horses which he drove under Capt. Cowger until the surrender of Cornwallis. Witness: Col. Rush, Joseph Mauzy, Jacob Miller and Pete Sellers.

Cottrell Lively was born 1760 and died 1838. Served two years in the Continental Line under Col. Armand. He served various places in Pennsylvania and Virginia. Received a pension and two hundred acres in Monroe County. He married Sarah Maddy 1790, by Rev. John Alderson. Their children were Jane Pack, Joseph, William, Judith, McGee, John, James, Thomas, Hamphill, Madison, Mary, Sallie Smith, Wilson and Lorenzo. They lived on Indian Creek.

Jacob Pence was from Rockingham County and was in the Augusta County militia from 1774 to the end of the war. He was in the battle at Point Pleasant. He lived in Monroe County and married Elizabeth Trust. They had three sons; Henry, David and Mose. One son married Nancy Stodghill.

William Sharp was born 1740 and was an Indian spy in Captain Lockridge’s company during the battle at Point Pleasant. He and William Mann were sent by General Lewis with a message to Governor Dunmore and did not rejoin the army until the morning after the battle. He was under the command of Captain Charles Lewis at Muskingham and in Col. Sampson Matthews Regiment and in a skirmish at Portsmouth. Discharged in 1781.

James, Joseph, Alexander and Sampson Sawyers (Savers) were Virginia Colonial soldiers. Alexander Sawyers of Augusta County in 1752, Captain of Horse soldiers under Major Andrew Lewis. In 1758 was a Captain, received no pay from 1758 to 1761. Payment was later received by Robert Sawyers, son and heir in 1780. James Sawyers was a Sergeant in a ranging company under Col. Boquet, November 17, 1779, Augusta County.

Captain Michael Woods built Woods fort on Rich Creek. He was the executor of the will of William Woods. The fort was built in 1773 about four miles above Peterstown. Captain Woods and his men were with Col. Andrew Lewis in the battle at Point Pleasant. Some men from the fort accompanied Jacob Mann and Jacob Miller when they rescued the Meeks children.
John Cantley was with Captain Christian's company of rangers in 1760. The court certified his claim for service December 10, 1779, Botetourt County under Captain Christian. He received four hundred acres on Indian Creek. Surveyed by Thomas Edgar in March 1781. The property was owned previously by James Ellison. John married Elinor Lindsay.

Mitchell Clay was born 1753, son of William Clay. Mitchell and his two brothers David and Ezekiel were with General Lewis in the battle of Point Pleasant. A Montgomery court order of June 4, 1787 recommends Mitchell, Charles and William Clay for the rank of Captain, Lieutenant and Ensign, respectively of the 2nd Battalion, 86th Regiment of Virginia militia. Mitchell was in Captain James company of Montgomery County and also in Robertson's company. His troubles with hostile Indians are documented in several West Virginia books. Mitchell was granted eight hundred acres on Bluestone Creek at Clover Bottom. He married Phoebe Belcher in 1750.

Amanda Cantley, a daughter of Drucilla Clay were descendents of Mitchell Clay. Amanda was the wife of Callohill Aliff and grandparents of Bert Aliff-(father of the writer).

Thomas Farley, Sr., was on the western border as early as 1758, scouting in the French and Indian wars with his brothers Francis and John. He was born 1703. He continued as a scout against the Indians until after the Revolution. He and his brothers fought in the battle of Point Pleasant. They spent several weeks helping to construct Fort Randolph (Point Pleasant) and assisted in getting the sick and wounded back to their homes on the Greenbrier and New Rivers. Thomas constructed a fort at Culbertson's Bottom about 1775, below the mouth of Tom's Run just above Warford or Bull Falls. The Farleys as Patriots had the oath of loyalty administered to each of them October 11, 1777. Thomas is buried on a plateau known as Matthew's farm near Sugar Run at Walkers Creek in Giles County. He selected the place of his burial and said he didn't want to be buried down in a mud hole.

Francis Farley was born in Chesterfield County, Virginia 1726 and died at Shawnee Town, Illinois 1829 at the age of one hundred and three. He came to the New River settlement before the Revolution. He was a frontier soldier who had several encounters with the Indians. Francis was in Captain Clement's company with General Green in the Carolina's during the American Revolution. He was in Woods company at the battle of Point Pleasant, Henderson's company 1782 and was one of Caperton's Rangers on the Greenbrier and Kanawha rivers. Francis married Nancy Blankenship and was the father of Drewry Farley and ancestor of the Farley's of Pipestem.

Matthew Farley was in Hendersons company and was the Captain of the lower area of Captain Caperton's company from James Wilson's down the river and up Indian Creek and all below Phil Cook, William Lafferty and Lt. Reuben Booten's. Others of Henderson's company were James Bradshaw, Alexander Clark, Joseph and James Ellison, Francis Keatley, Adam and Jacob Mann, William Lafferty, Andrew and Archibald Peters, Matthias Kessinger and Michael Woods. Matthew was a Captain. He married Esther McMullen 1785 by Rev. John Alderson. Were parents of four sons and five daughters.

Drewry Farley, Sr., was born 1770, died at his home at Beech Spring at age eighty one. He married Mary Adkins. He spent time in the Revolution in what is now Giles County on Walker's Creek. Drewry was in Captain Caperton's company of New River men against the Indians in the Kanawha Valley at the mouth of Elk River. They scouted down the Kanawha to Point Pleasant. The company had a number of skirmishes with Indians but no one was killed except one man killed who went across the river to kill a turkey that he heard gobble. Drewry heard the turkey gobble a second time and said no well behaved turkey would gobble in the same place twice so he went up the river a distance and crossed, making his way and
creeping up to find an Indian hidden by a chestnut stump. He shot and killed the Indian and scalped him after he found that the Indian had killed and scalped his friend. The Farley's probably knew Daniel Boone, it was during this time that Daniel Boone was commissary for Caperton's men.

Drewry Farley and a friend named the place where they lived 'Pipestem', after finding a shrub called Spirea Alba which made a good pipestem. Drewry and his wife were the parents of eight sons and three daughters. His son Drewry Jr., was born 1823, (the youngest) married Sarah Belcher and lived at the southern end of the farm of Drewry Sr. Their oldest daughter daughter Clara Elizabeth Farley married Edmund Lilly, son of Rev. Joseph Lilly. Their daughter Cordia Ann Lilly and her husband Charles Halstead were parents of Mildred Halstead-Aliff, mother of the writer.

Samuel Gwinn was born 1750 or 1752 in Augusta County and served from 1771 to 1774 on the frontier and later under Captain's Landbridge, Glass and Col. Andrew Lewis. He moved to Monroe with his family about 1776 or 1778. Pension was issued 1834.

Pvt. Andrew Gwinn was in Captain M. Bowser's 12th Virginia with Col. James Wood for three years. Enlisted in Augusta County, June 1776. Applied for pension in 1818 at age sixty or seventy in Hampshire county.

John Scaggs was a frontier soldier who went with George Rogers Clark into the Illinois territory.

Thomas Alderson served six months in the Continental Line. Received a pension in Monroe County, 1832.

William Ballard was a Private and a Corporal in the companies of Captain Madison and Burton of Taylor's Regiment. He enlisted April 1779 and was in the battle at Yorktown. His last pay records was September 6, 1783. He was married to Elizabeth Steppe. The Ballards originally came from Scotland and settled in Greenbrier County about 1793. William is buried on the Gummings farm near Wikle. He also had brothers in the Revolution.

Elijah Ballard of Hans Creek, Monroe County was a soldier of the Revolution. He carried a piece of tallow under his coat and ate from it when his hunger became unbearable. He was granted nine hundred and seventy acres on Hans Creek.

Some other familiar names mentioned in Eckenrode's Virginia Colonial Soldiers were:
CHAPTER THREE

Indian Trouble
Jacob Mann, Mann home
Map of Quaking Asp Run
Before, during and after the American Revolution the Indians were making raids into western Virginia killing the settlers and taking prisoners. The first battle of the Revolution had begun with the Indians at the battle of Point Pleasant, October 10, 1774. General Lewis marched from Lewisburg with twelve hundred men to the Ohio. Pack horses carried food, powder and lead. The one hundred sixty mile route had been charted by Matthew Arbuckle. Their camp "Pleasant" was named Point Pleasant.

On the night of October 9th Chief Cornstalk readied for a surprise attack the next day. The planned massacre is shown by the fact that he stationed men on both sides of the river opposite the camp to kill any who might escape by swimming the river. Two Virginia men arose early and went deer hunting and ran into the Indians, one man (Gilmore) was killed and the others rushed into camp stating that acres of Indians were approaching. This began one of the hardest fought battles and most important battles between Indians and pioneers in our country's history, some saying it lasted for twelve hours. The Virginia officers later praised the stand of the Indians and said Chief Cornstalk could be heard encouraging his men to be strong. It was a close encounter with hand to hand fighting with knives, tomahawks and gun barrels with Indians determined to finish off their foe and the Virginians wanting revenge for the attacks their families had suffered. (Permission from John Clark, whose article appeared in Viewpoint).

Sometime later Captain Hall was on duty when Cornstalk, his son Elinipsico and Red Hawk were brought into the fort as hostages. (Gilmore who had been killed was a kinsman and neighbor of Hall's). Hall and several of his company proceeded with a retaliation and shot the three Indians including Red Hawk over the protests of John Stuart and Colonel Fleming who were threatened with sure death if they interfered. When the county court of Rockbridge sat for examination of Captain Hall and Galbreath no one appeared as witness against them, they were acquitted. Colonel J. L. Peyton in his History of Augusta County wrote of the battle, "it was throughout a terrible scene, the ring of rifles and roar of muskets, the clubbed guns, flashing knives in hand to hand fighting, screams for mercy smothered in death groans, every man for himself with his enemy in view - the sounds of battle dying away, the collecting again of the whites covered with gore and sweat bearing trophies of the slain, their dripping knives in one hand and rifle barrel bent and smeared with brains and hair in the other. No language can adequately describe it".

Most of these men were involved in the war of the Revolution. Aside from distinguishing themselves at Point Pleasant, six occupied seats in the House of Representatives, three were members of the U. S. Senate, five became Governor's, one a Lt. Governor, one a Territorial Governor, one was a military and civilian Commandant of upper Louisiana and a hundred were state legislators.

During the year of the bloody three sevens (1777), Indian attacks threatened the Virginia frontier. Greenbrier valley counties were forced to line up the units of militia from Fort Pitt, Pennsylvania to Point Pleasant. Supplies were scarce—meat, salt, guns and ammunition. Most men carried their own weapons, gun if he had one, tomahawk and butcher knife. In May of
1778 forty warriors ranged over a wide area killing residents of Wolf Creek. Three hundred Wyandott and Mingo's appeared at Fort Randolph on May 16th demanding surrender and Captain McKee refused. The indians killed about one hundred fifty cattle and the men stayed in the fort. On May 28th three hundred attacked Fort Donnally a few miles from Lewisburg. The settlers prepared for the attack. Matthew Arbuckle and his men arrived in the afternoon. After the loss of seventeen warriors the indians divided into small groups and attacked the homesteads. Cook's Fort enclosed an acre and a half and sheltered three hundred people in 1778. Jacob Mann volunteered to go out for food and after shooting a deer he was seen by the Shawnee. He threw his game into a sink hole and went in with his dog and held his dog's mouth. After dark he returned to the fort. (The sinkhole was very near to the old Indian Creek Baptist church, still there to this day).

Indians attacked the house of James Graham at Lowell, September 11, 1777 and killed Graham's son, Walter Caldwell, his negro slave and captured his young daughter Elizabeth. She was adopted by Cornstalk's family, after eight years was ransomed by her father.

About 1780 Steel Lafferty and the wife of a Bradshaw were killed. The Lafferty's had a fort at Quaking Asp Run and Indian Creek. Once they heard what seemed to be a turkey then found to be an Indian peering from a tree and was shot and trailed by his blood to Indian Creek. William Meeks who lived nearby saw the Indians and rode to a neighbors house where two women opened the door for him. Meeks fired, wounding one. Later in March, eight Indians burned Meeks home and corn, killed the parents and carried away two young boys. On hearing the news Jacob and Adam Mann, James Ellison and others from Wood's company set out to get the Meeks children. After fifty miles they overtook the Indians. At dawn each man took careful aim at his Indian and killed or wounded all and recovered the boys.

Woods Fort was built by Captain Michael Woods, located on Rich Creek. During the battle at Point Pleasant Captain Wood furnished Colonel Preston with a roll of seventeen men from the area.

The Jarrett's had a fort on Indian Creek and the Farley's had a large fort, just across New River from the mouth of Indian Creek. Many of their children were born at the fort throughout years of Indian troubles.

In the court of Augusta County at Staunton of 1756 reports that Moses Mann was taken as a prisoner by Indians on New River. A list of prisoners captured earlier by Indians on New River and Greenbrier included names of people in the Greenbrier area: Gilmore, Davison, See, Stover, Lowrey, Butler and John Wiseman. Some of the prisoners brought in from the lower Shawnee towns and Fort Vause were Barnett, Cincaid (Kincaid) Burke, Miller, Voss, Bingamin, Martin, Boyles, Ramsey and others. (From New River Early Settlements by Patricia Johnson). Fort Vause was at Shawsville between Christianburg and Salem, east of New River.

The Indians created great anxiety along the Kanawha and New River in 1793, the Governor ordered a company of soldiers to the mouth of Elk River at Charleston. Captain Caperton raised a company of men for this service, some of whom were Captain Matthew Farley, Francis, Drewry and Edward Farley, Isaac Calloway, James Graham, James Sweeney and others.
Dr. A. S. Bosworth wrote in his history of Randolph County "Thomas Wilmoth was entitled to four hundred acres of land on the Cheat River including his settlement of 1771 and 1776. The Cheat River was previously called Wilmoth's River in earlier history because the Wilmoth's were the first settlers on its banks. The English family consisted of four brothers and two sisters who were Nicholas, Thomas, James, John, Deborah and Susan. James was murdered by Indians probably at the time of the Leading Creek massacre during the time the family was housed at Friends and Wilson's forts.

Tradition says the Indians visited a Wilmoth home near Elkins while all were absent except Mrs. Wilmoth. They searched the home for the men, throwing their tomahawks into the logs of the cabin while giving savage exclamations of threats and anger. Mrs. Wilmoth had prepared a pot of cornmeal mush sweetened with sugar, milk and maple syrup and she gave each Indian a spoon. The half famished Indians showed evident signs of delight and gratification. When one would violate the rules of Indian etiquette he was punished by a stroke on the head with words of admonition and violent gestures not to repeat the same. After finishing they studied Mrs. Wilmoth with penetrating gazes then giving a war-whoop continued on their marauding expedition. Mrs. Wilmoth's diplomacy saved her life. One of her descendents, Troy Wilmoth of Elkins was Superintendent of schools in 1915, also a teacher. He appeared in the family of Halstead-Lilly as he was married to Cordia Lilly-Halstead's sister Orpha Lilly.

The Indians angered by years of broken treaties and being pushed westward had attacked westerners with a vengeance. Half naked and painted they would appear suddenly and quietly and were good at covering their tracks. They were courageous and willing to die. After killing and scalping the men and women they would also take women and children as prisoners. The babies being a hindrance in traveling to Indian towns were brained against a tree. A few people were eventually able to escape. Strangely, some women and children were treated well and some were loved as well as their own family. Some of the captured youngsters later fell into the Indian way of life and became part of the tribe, married and never returned home.

In retaliation for the deaths of their own-some of the prisoners would be stripped, painted black all over and slowly burned at the stake while others were made to watch. Being painted black meant that sure death was imminent, and were usually scalped just before their last breath. Both Indians and pioneers scalped before or after the killings. Pioneers filled with hatred for their murdered families sometimes made razor strips from the skins off a dead Indians back.

After forty years of suffering and death General Wayne's victory at Fallen Timbers, Ohio, finally peace was gained from the Indian tribes and a treaty was signed August 20, 1794. It is estimated that from the French and Indian war of 1745 to Wayne's victory, a period of forty years, at least five thousand people were killed or captured west of the Allegheny's.

The Shawnee Indians moved on toward Kansas.
JACOB MANN.

[From a photo taken for the Blade]

About the year 1740, near the present site of Charlottesville, Va, and

Jacob Mann
Pioneer and Indian fighter of Indian Creek, Virginia

Photo from Dewey Broyles
Franklin and Leonard Mann's father Frank and Frank's sister Molly.

Old Homeplace for three generations of the Mann Family on Indian Creek
Area of our first ancestors
Quaking Asp Run aka Stinking Lick Creek
At Indian Creek

Map by Clint Halstead
Paul, Clint and Mildred Halstead (Aliff) at the area where James Halstead’s seventy-four acre farm was located on Indian Creek and where James may have watered his six horses. (Indian Mills)
CHAPTER FOUR

James Halstead, Pioneer at Indian Creek, Virginia
The First Halstead Cemetery at Indian Mills
James' Written Permission for Benjamin to Marry Patience Roles
Seventy Four Acres From Joseph Siers-Sawyers to James-1791
There is no proof to show where James Halstead, the pioneer, came from before he appeared in Greenbrier County records with his small family. The first mention of him was in Greenbrier County tithables in 1787, and he could have been in the area some years before that date. His tithable assessment was made April 14, 1787. His neighbors assessed the same day were: Reuben Booten, James Ellison, Jr., Francis Farley, John Farley, Matthew Farley, James Haynes, William Lacy, Sr., William Lafferty, Samuel Pack, David Tremble, and James Wilson. James would have been about forty-seven years old at that time, according to Mr. Everett Miller’s Family History that states “James Halstead was born in England about 1740 and was the father of John Halstead”.

James our ancestor, would have spent his time or required years in the militia, on the frontier and/or the American Revolution as was required of all able-bodied men. There are no militia records found for him anywhere in western Virginia or elsewhere. Unless he was James the Patriot of the 12th Virginia Regiment, from the upper panhandle of western Virginia. Our James of Indian Creek had died before the men of the Revolution made applications for pensions around 1818. (Would he have applied?) Most of his neighbors on Indian Creek were involved in the militia on the frontier and the Revolution, some being in Vause’s Company. The only archive records found are of James, Patriot of the 12th Regiment and most militia men are mentioned in one or more old records or books unless they were killed.

During the 1700's thousands traveled down from Pennsylvania, New Jersey, New York and other states southward on the “Great Wagon Road” previously called the Warrior's Trail. It began at about Philadelphia, then on to Winchester Virginia, to Lexington, Kentucky, Charlotte and Salisbury, North Carolina and on to Augusta, Georgia. At Fincastle the “Wilderness Road” turned westward at Wytheville Virginia and on to Knoxville then to Nashville, Tennessee. These roads were wide enough for wagons.

The ports of Philadelphia and New York were major ports of entry into America in the early times. Many traveled south and would eventually settle in the southwestern parts of Virginia before and after the Revolution.

Benjamin, the youngest son of James told census takers that he was born in North Carolina, in 1781. A search of North Carolina records show no records of the family in 1781 or in years previously. Many settlers on Indian Creek were coming from North Carolina in the late 1700's traveling up New River with their pack mules and wagons, traveling the old Indian trails. New River is formed by the junction of North Fork of New River and South Fork of New River. Both forks arise in Watauga County, North Carolina. New River takes a northeastern course through North Carolina.

James and his sons John, Amos, and Benjamin were found in many old records of Greenbrier, and later Monroe County. The Greenbrier court records of August 28, 1789 show that the court ordered Lewis Booten to pay James Halstead two hundred pounds of tobacco for eight days of court attendance as a witness in Booten’s suit with James Haynes. (Both were neighbors of James). This would have required several days of traveling horseback from Indian Creek to Lewisburg court depending on the route taken and perhaps staying at Lewisburg the entire time. Tobacco was used as a form of exchange. Seven months later on March 31, 1790 James Haynes was ordered by the court to pay Samuel Pack and William Lafferty three hundred pounds of tobacco and to James Halstead three hundred fifty pounds of tobacco as a witness in the suit against James Bymsides. Bymsides was also required to pay Matthew and John Farley two hundred fifty pounds of tobacco in the same case. (This was in regard to a land dispute). One pound of tobacco was worth three and one half cents, five pounds was worth one shilling and one shilling worth thirty-three cents, at that time.
And a year later on March 31st, 1791, James was at court again as plaintiff against Joseph Siers (Sawyers) in a case of debt. At this time John Siers undertook the debt for Joseph Sawyers. Neither one paid the debt to James. Three months later James came to court on Friday, June 3rd, 1791 vs Joseph and John Siers in a debt case. At this time an agreement was made between all parties and the case dismissed. The agreement resulted in James purchasing seventy four acres from Joseph Siers (Sawyers) on June 28th, 1791. He paid five shillings (about one dollar and sixty five cents). The transaction disclosed that the property was located at the mouth of Indian Creek and Quaking Asp Run, crossing Indian at Ellison’s property, etc. Also stated that James was already living on the property at the time. (He must have been living there since 1786 because he had the same neighbors as the ones listed in the Greenbrier tithables, but he was not the owner of the property at that time). I have wondered about this. This land transaction can be found on LDS microfilm #0593549, Greenbrier County records. The noted John Stuart, frontier soldier and Clerk of Greenbrier court hand-wrote the three page document in his one room stone office which still stands on his property about four miles from Ronceverte. His home is a few feet away.

The first settlers acquired land by clearing land and making a brush heap or by tomahawk markings on trees, some applied for land warrants and some earned land for service during the Indian wars and the war for independence. Many acquired land as speculators or as opportunists who preyed on others unfortunate situations.

At the time James purchased his farm he also had a survey made of ninety six acres, located on the south branch of Indian Creek adjoining his own farm. James paid tax on this property until 1815. (Charleston archives) A permit from the Governor called a land warrant allowed a settler to settle legally on any land not claimed by anyone else and all or part could be sold or assigned to others. After locating open land that he liked, the pioneer would have it surveyed and entered. Legal title usually went to the first person there. The surveyor sent a description of the tract to the land office and it was written into a grant. Owning land was of the utmost importance to insure some future for the sons in the family.

The old pioneers were constantly in and out of court settling disputes with their neighbors and collecting debts. Most were indebted at some time or another. Many are mentioned in Greenbrier Court Orders by Helen S. Stinson.

James farm was situated in Greenbrier County which later became Monroe County in 1799 and is now located in Summers County in the Bluestone Reservoir Camping Area at Indian Mills. The counties changed but James farm was always at the same place. James wife, our ancestor grandmother’s name is unknown. She was counted in the Monroe County census of 1810 as female along with their female free slave, both being over age forty five. In that year James would have been about seventy years old. (Who was our first grandmother)? Could her name have been Nancy? Her three sons would each name a daughter Nancy. Was she a member of one of the families living nearby who had come to Greenbrier with them? Her death date is unknown and she was not mentioned after the census of 1810. She could have been living with a son or daughter after James died in 1815 (disappeared from records). His three sons lived on the ninety five acres beginning with John then Amos, then owned by Benjamin after 1815.

(Joseph Siers (Sawyers) was a soldier of the Revolution for eight years. Moved from Monroe to Franklin Co., IN by 1811. He and Elizabeth McDade had seven children. He died May 2, 1816. His will is recorded in Jackson County, IN. 1816.)
Oren Morton, author of *Monroe County History*, writes that James Halstead voted in the 1800 Presidential election when John Adams became our second President and said that voters at that time were of some worth and substance. Thomas Jefferson became President in 1801. Alexander Hamilton was instrumental in getting votes thrown to Jefferson instead of Aaron Burr which resulted in Burr’s hatred of Hamilton. Hamilton was a soldier and personal secretary to George Washington. Burr challenged Hamilton to a duel which resulted in Hamilton being shot. Soon after, James’ grandson was named Alexander Hamilton Halstead, the son of Benjamin. James was living on Indian Creek when George Washington became President and he lived through the terms of John Adams, Thomas Jefferson and James Madison.

James saw his share of Indians and was probably involved in skirmishes and perhaps told his grandchildren some exciting stories or tragedies. The family was living on Indian Creek about ten years before the Indians left the area—sometime around 1795. Indian Creek was in direct line of an Indian trail where there was an easy ford across New River nearby. There was a flint quarry at the mouth of Quaking Asp Run at Indian Creek and a natural salt lick where animals gathered. The Indians were very familiar with the area. James may have had trouble with Indians perhaps even before he came to Indian Creek.

Farming and raising horses was what James did and he usually owned five or six horses at a time. Owning one horse was an accomplishment in those days. He owned six horses in the first tax records of Monroe in 1799 and paid sixty three cents in property tax. A good horse was worth about fifty dollars. During the same year his sons John and Amos were first mentioned in tax records and each one owned one horse and each paid twelve cents in property tax. James paid about the same amount of tax until the year of 1813. That year his tax was unusually large and was taxed five dollars and forty one cents, on horses, one female slave and covered buildings. Most of the tax was on covered buildings. (Could this have been the year that the church and school was built on his property)? Oren Morton tells that Benjamin had a church at the east end of the old iron bridge that crossed Indian Creek. This was on James’ property that Benjamin inherited from his father. The last tax James paid was in the year of 1815 being for four mares, colts and one stud horse. (no slave) That year he gave his farm to his son Benjamin for one dollar. He was unable to sign his name on the transaction, perhaps because of a stroke or some other debilitating illness. He was never mentioned again in records of West Virginia or elsewhere. He would have been about seventy five years old.

James may have looked like Daniel Boone in his dress. Perhaps wore a fringed hunting shirt, woolen or buckskin leggings, fur cap and moccasins. May have had a beard. He had a belt and powder horn, leather pouch which held bullets, lead and moulds and possibly a knife and tomahawk. If he had a gun it was a flint lock rifle. If he looked like his grandson Mordicai or Jacob of whom we have old pictures, he would have been a tall slim man with dark curly hair and blue eyes. He was probably a religious, educated man who educated his children. Perhaps he was a Baptist, one son became a Baptist Minister as well as one of his grandsons. At this time it is not known if James was born in America or England or whether he came here as a baby or as a grown married man.

By 1803 John the oldest son of James was living further down on Indian Creek with his wife Elizabeth near the Mann and Miller families. That year John gave his farm to his brother Amos and by 1813 Amos and his wife Nancy left for Kanawha-Boone County with other families going westward. Amos gave his farm to Benjamin. Benjamin became owner of his father’s farm—the ninety six acres and his own farm, eventually nearly one thousand acres in all.
In addition to James's three sons John, Amos and Benjamin there was a daughter Elizabeth. She was older and could have been a widowed daughter in law. The children were born somewhere before the move to Greenbrier County. The family was unusually small, because in those days most families had from nine to fifteen children. They may have lost some of their family through death or may have been killed or stolen by the Indians.

James gave his handwritten permission for "my son Benjamin to marry Patience Roles", proving that James was the father. Marriages solemnized by banns publication required no marriage bond and perhaps is why I found no bond for Amos and Nancy but they were married by Rev. John Alderson and are listed in Alderson's marriage returns.

Early pioneers worked hard clearing land, building log houses, fences, barns, planting and harvesting. Crops often failed due to drought or late spring freezes. There were no pesticides so bugs and worms ate part of everything. Money was very scarce, tobacco was used as currency for trade. The sale of cattle, sheep, horses brought some money. Some men trapped for furs, one beaver skin was worth one buck and two doe's (one buck=one dollar). Wolf heads brought about seven dollars, panther heads a little less. Salt was very scarce in early times and was very necessary for preserving food for the winter and was very expensive.

Most people lived in log homes, some small, some large two story and some were made of stone such as the big stone Estill house nearby on Indian Creek which was built before James came to Indian Creek. There are remnants of one of the early Halstead log homes near Harold Dickson's place at Lindside. The first part of it was built of huge square logs that looked to be about two feet on all four sides reported to be one of the oldest homes in the area and built from virgin timber. Some say it was built by Jacob or William Mann. William and Ellen Halstead were the last occupants. (William, great grandson of John and Elizabeth Mann-Halstead).

Another large log home nearby on Indian Creek built by the Mann family housed three generations. It stood near the old Primitive Baptist Church on Mann's property. The big log home was replaced by a two story home which stood for many years until recently sold. Franklin Mann and his wife Sandra live on part of the old original Mann property in a lovely new house on Indian Creek.

Food preservation was important, canning food was a long way down the road. They dried fruit from their orchards by stringing pieces on thread and hanging it to dry. They dried green beans the same way and were called leather britches beans when eaten later on. Potatoes, onions, apples etc. were buried in a large hole in the ground, covered with canvas and dirt which lasted through the winter. Some food was pickled when salt was available. Some salt was dug near the mouth of Quaking Asp Creek but most was hauled from the salt mines from Kanawha County. There are remnants of an old ice house on the banks of the creek built from stone near where James lived. Chunks of ice were hauled from the creek early in the spring which kept food cool until sometime in the early summer. Meat was butchered, smoked, salted and hung from rafters in smoke houses. There were granary's for storage of grain and corn and poulty houses for chickens to roost in. Turkeys roosted in tall trees and would stay around if they were fed. A spring house was usually built into the bank of a hill where cold mountain water ran through on a floor of slate or stone, keeping milk and butter cool even in summer.

Work started before daylight when fires were made in stoves until dark, the dishes washed and wood brought in for the next day. Women's work started early and they were never caught up.
Aside from raising children, cooking, preserving food, they spun wool and flax into thread and made all the family clothes. Some women who were expert seamstresses sewed for others. (Women prisoners of the Indians were treated respectfully if they could sew and make shirts demanded by the men) Bedding of the pioneer families was made from rope drawn tight and fastened to the bedstead, the tighter the better. (sleep tight) There were straw ticks and feather tick for mattresses and homemade quilts.

Mothers and grandmothers often had a little pharmacy of herbs and weeds growing out behind the barn or nearby that were used for remedies and cures. Some herbs they used were sage, dittany, boneset, catnip, horehound, lobelia, walnut bark, snakeroot, elder blossoms, mayapple root, slippery elm and dandelion root. There were no miracle drugs and children died of an illness that can be cured overnight, today. When a family member died they were cleaned and dressed in their best clothes, put in a homemade coffin and buried in the family cemetery, nearby. There was usually a fieldstone to mark the grave, some had names and dates carved into it. Deaths were seldom reported. Their names were written in family bibles.

Quaking Asp Run was a little creek that ran down from James farm between mountains toward Ballard and Peterstown. There are stone remnants of an old bridge abutment where James lived that crossed Quaking Asp at Indian, built many years ago and is a few yards from the old iron bridge across Indian Creek. Quaking Asp probably got its name from white aspen or trembling poplar trees whose leaves would flutter at the smallest breeze. Quake is an old English word for shake. Sometime later in the 1800's the name was changed to Stinking Lick Creek because of an animal who drowned and tainted the air for several weeks.

The Red Sulphur Baptist church was organized at the home of Benjamin and was first called the Union Baptist church and stood at the east end of the present old iron bridge across Indian. There was a stone chimney in the middle with a fireplace on each side. The name was changed in 1845. The present church is a handsome white structure near Ballard. (O. Morton) The family cemetery was located on James farm near Indian Creek. James and our first grandmother were buried there.

The cemetery was called Nr. 20 by the Corps of Engineers of the Bluestone Project Relocation program, located at the mouth of Quaking Asp on Indian Creek about 200 to 250 yards downstream near the bank of Indian. There were seventeen graves with six identified: Mandy Skaggs, Jake Makin, Wilson Keatley, his wife Martha Roles-Keatley and their son age six. No Halstead knew of the cemetery or people who were buried there until Clint Halstead and I made the discovery and Clint located it by contacting the Corps of Engineers who sent the diagram and information. The cemetery was moved nearby to a hill on higher ground when the Bluestone dam was built. The unknown Halsteads who were buried there were probably James, born 1740 died 1815, and his wife whose name is unknown, perhaps Selena Clark-Halstead-first wife of Alexander Halstead, Emily Toler who died August 1855 at age seven, Erastus Toler who died in 1855 at the age of ten months, Sarah J. Toler who died 1855 at age eleven (children of Nancy Halstead and Caleb Toler). Their three children died of flux disease that summer and fall. Benjamin who died in 1856 was living there on three acres until he died in 1856 and was probably buried there. His wife Patience and their son Lorenzo were living there in 1860 and counted in the census of Monroe that year. She died sometime after 1860 and before 1870 and probably buried beside Benjamin. Lorenzo joined the Confederacy from there in 1861 and was injured in the Battle of Cedar Creek and may be buried there also, nothing more was found about Lorenzo after he returned from the war. Further down on Indian Creek the children of John Halstead and Elizabeth Mann are buried in the old Miller-Halstead cemetery along with their grandchildren. Amos and his family are buried in Boone county.
Most people helped each other in times of trouble or need and came without being asked. Men sometimes lost their wives after having several children who had worked themselves to death. Husbands would have to remarry soon as possible to help raise his family and the second family. If one could live through the epidemics and childhood diseases one could often live a long life. (Thomas Farley lived to be one hundred and eight years old).

James' children were schooled either by the parents or perhaps in a town with schools before they came to Greenbrier County. Son John became a teacher as well as two of his sons, Adam and William. Elizabeth wrote her own marriage permission in bold legible lettering stating that she was of age and not requiring permission from her parents (1799). There were handwritten documents such as marriage permissions, etc., recorded and kept at the Union Court House then later microfilmed. In the permission James wrote for Benjamin as an afterthought he added an mn over the ie in Benjamin's name. James' children were nearly grown by 1787. John apparently was the oldest, about twenty one in 1787 if he was born about 1766 as is recorded in the LDS Ancestral records. Birthdates could not be found for John, Amos, Elizabeth and Benjamin in Virginia, North Carolina and West Virginia records.

The courtyard at Union had a pillory, stocks and whipping posts used for punishment. The number of lashes laid on a bare back were seldom more than thirty nine. Duels were climaxed by insults or difference of opinion. Mothers of children born out of wedlock forfeited money to the poor, court costs and were ostracized by the church. Soon the whipping posts and burning in the hand were abolished. Most obeyed the law though there were many fist fights during court sessions. Most people were religious, honest, gracious, genteel and morally strict. Some people were not without grudges, some lasting a lifetime. Usually one's word was good whether it was a threat or a promise.

The friends and neighbors to James were Jacob and Adam Mann, John and Henry Miller, Alexander Clark, Francis and James Keatley, James Ellison, Francis Farley, William Lafferty, Isaac Estill, William Ballard, Jacob Pence and Christopher Roles. Mr. Estill sold his big stone house to Jacob Pence in 1818. Lafferty's fort was nearest to James and he was close to Cook's and Mann's forts. The children and grandchildren of James married into the neighboring families for about three generations. The last mention of James was of James and his neighbor Alexander Clark being appointed to view and mark alterations in the road from Peters mountain to the mouth of Indian Creek, 1813.

There were a few Halsteads that could not be put into a specific family who may or may not have been children of James. James Ellison mentions his daughter Nancy Halstead in his will, dated February 18, 1839. Nancy may have married a grandson of James. Mary Halstead married James Woods in 1810, by Rev. John Alderson. She was born about 1790 or before. The Woods lived nearby and had a fort on Rich Creek. In the mid 1800's George K. and Elizabeth Alstadt of Salt Sulphur lived in Monroe County. Many times in old records our name was misspelled as Alstadt. Every Halstead name that I researched so far can be traced back to James and his three sons. I haven't found everyone because the current generation now numbers in the thousands. I think most can perhaps find their grandparents or great grandparents names in this book. There were many who moved out west and their descendents are unknown. I hope some will make themselves known.
First Halstead cemetery at Indian Mills labeled number 20 by the Corps of Engineers when moved to higher ground when the Bluestone Reservoir was built. Grave number six was Mandy Skaggs, grave number eleven was Jake Makin. There were eleven unknown Halsteads.

Quaking Asp or (Stinking Lick)

Iron bridge across Indian Cr.

Brown Information Building at Indian Mills Camping Ground
Handwritten permission from James Halstead for his son Benjamin to marry Patience Roles in the year of 1803. Also permission for Patience Roles to marry Benjamin, written by Henry (?) or Nancy (?) Roles.
This indenture made the 28th day of June April one thousand seven hundred and ninety one between Joseph Sawyers and Elizabeth his wife of the one part and James Hallsted of the other, both of the county of Green Brier and State of Virginia witnesseseth that the said Joseph Sawyers and Elizabeth his wife for and in consideration of the sum of five shillings current money of said state to them in Land grants at or before and delivering of these presents the tract whereof that we hereby acknowledge and have bargained and sold and by these presents do bargain and sell unto the said James Hallsted and his heirs a certain tract or parcel of land lying and being in the County of Green Brier on Indian Creek, it being part of a surveyance for said Sawyers where said Hallsted now lives containing seventy four acres adjoining the lands of William Booten and is bounded as followith: To wit, Beginning at a sugar and Buck Eye corner to Booten and leaving the same S & E 30 pi to Dog Wood and Hickory South thirty four Degrees East, fifty eight pole to a Buck and ? South fifty two degrees East fifty poles to a white oak South sixty degrees East fifty four poles to two ? at the mouth of Quaking Asp south eighteen degrees west fifty poles to a large white Oake South twenty two degrees East thirty four pole to two white oaks north sixty degrees East twenty six pole to a Dog Wood and Hickory at the Branch and down the same N 60 W 82 pole crossing a Branch and Indian Creek to a Walnut opposite the mouth of the Quaking Asp corner to Ellisons and with his line North forty five degrees West sixty two pole to three White oaks North sixty degrees East ninety pole to a white oak corner to the same and leaving the same North 67 Degrees West fifty four pole to a red oak corner to Booten and with the same South fifty nine Degrees West pole by a Black oak North and a double line on the Bank of the creek and crossing the same North sixty six degrees West thirty six pole to the Beg; with appurtenances to the said James Halsted and his heirs to the sole use and behalf of the said James Hallsted and his heirs for ever and the said Joseph Sawyers and Sarah his wife for themselves and their heirs doth covenant with said James Hallsted and his heirs the said Tract or parcel of land from themselves and (a bug is filmed here) their heirs to the said James Hallsted and his heirs against all and every person or persons whatsoever will and will forever defend. In Witness whereof we have here unto set our hands and seal the day and year above mentioned.

Joseph Sciar his mark SEAL

Signed sealed and delivered in presence of the court
Teste John Stuart, Clk. SEAL

At the court held for Green Brier County the 28th Day of June This of bargain sale from Joseph Siers to James Halstead was acknowledged in Court by said Joseph and ordered to record.

Test,

John Stuart
Elizabeth, presumed to be the daughter of James was mentioned in connection with the family in old records and lived in the same district (39½) of Monroe County. She and the others were probably born somewhere before the move to Greenbrier County and may have been a widowed daughter in law.

Elizabeth and Charles Meeks applied for a marriage bond May 22, 1799 and they were married June 18, 1799 by Rev. Jacob Cook of Cook's Fort. Charles signed his name with an x. Elizabeth wrote her marriage request stating that she was of an age to do so. (over twenty one) (Elizabeth’s handwriting was very different from that of her brothers John and Benjamin).

A surety bond of one hundred fifty dollars was required by the state for a marriage bond. James Maddy co-signed on the bond for Charles to marry Elizabeth. James Maddy was married to Anne Kessinger and was thirty one years old. The Maddy family had come from Philadelphia to Orange County before settling on Indian Creek.

The couple traveled to the new court of Monroe County accompanied by her two brothers John and Amos who were also going to apply for marriage bonds. John was going to marry Elizabeth Mann, daughter of Adam Mann and Mary Maddy. Amos was to marry Nancy Ellis of Wolf Creek. John's friend Henry Miller traveled along with them to get a marriage bond to marry Rhoda Brooking. John and Henry co signed the surety bonds for one another. The trip may have taken a good part of the day, and the ladies may have been with them.

Charles Meeks lived on Bradshaw Creek very near to James. He may have been a member of the Meeks family who in years previously been attacked by the Indians. The parents were killed, their house and cornfields were burned and the two little boys were stolen by the Indians. Jacob, Adam Mann and others rescued the children. The story is mentioned in several books.

The Monroe County property tax records for 1799 shows Charles paying tax on one horse. After his marriage the following year he owned and paid tax on two horses, twelve cents for each horse. Charles and Elizabeth lived in the same area as her parents until 1803. That year they owned four horses and then disappeared from all records of western Virginia and elsewhere. At this time many people were migrating to the west and it is presumed that the couple went west.

After that time there were other Meeks families in Monroe County. Edmond Meeks, a carpenter age fifty four, 1850 census, born 1796. Selburn Meeks married Mary Ripley January, 1858. Andrew Meak was one of Daniel Morgan's riflemen during the Revolution and was in the 12th Virginia Regiment. During the war the Army reimbursed several of the Meeks for furnishing food rations for the army. Names mentioned in the ration transactions were William Meeks paid for two hundred thirty four rations and James was paid for seventy four rations. A James Meeks lived on Indian Creek near the Milburns and Estills. James and William Meeks each owned four hundred acres on Indian in 1783. A William Meeks was married to Mollie Nowlan. These families may have been related. (a ration was one sheep or a cow, or pig or other-amounting to one ration).
1799—MAY 22 MARRIAGE BOND OF CHARLES MEKKS AND ELIZABETH HALSTEAD.

JAMES MADDY—SURETY.

The Marriage Bond of Charles Meeks and Elizabeth Halstead, bound to James Maddie, surety, at the commonwealth in the sum of one thousand dollars, for the appearance of the party of the first part and for his execution in the penalty of one thousand dollars, with condition that the said Charles Meeks and Elizabeth Halsted be lawfully and legally married between the said Charles Meeks and Elizabeth Halsted.

This 22nd day of May, 1799, the commonwealth of New York, in the name and by the authority of the same, do hereby give, grant, and release to Charles Meeks and Elizabeth Halstead, for marriage intended between the said parties, being of lawful and public age and able to test the marriage of the said parties.

James Maddie,

ELIZABETH HALSTEAD SIGNS PERMISSION TO MARRY
John was the first son mentioned in old records and probably was the oldest. Mr. Everette Miller wrote in his book of family history that John Halstead was the son of James Halstead. There are no records to show his exact age but records in the Ancestral charts in the LDS give one birth date as 1760 and another as 1766. Neither may be accurate. If his father James was married in 1760 at the age of about twenty, it is possible that John was born between 1760 and 1765. Was he born in America or England? I found no previous records of the family before Greenbrier and Monroe county records as of this date. John would have been about ten or fifteen at the time of the Revolution. (1777)

Usually the first son was named for his father or grandfather and the grandfather may have been John. No middle names were recorded anywhere for James or his three sons. The family was unusually small for those times and there may have been other children who are unknown. John saw his share of Indians in his lifetime and was about ten or fifteen when the battle at Point Pleasant took place in 1774 and was not in the area at that time. John was about nineteen or so when George Washington became President. During his lifetime the other Presidents were John Adams, Thomas Jefferson, James Madison, James Monroe and John Q. Adams.

John is mentioned many times in old records, the earliest perhaps being in connection with the estate settlement of George Conrad of 1783 mentioned in Morton's History of Monroe. John's name was misspelled as Alstadt. Their names were spelled this way and about ten other ways in old records. George Conrad lived on Indian Creek, his wife was Catherine Miller of Jacob and Catherine Miller from Philadelphia and Virginia.

It appears that John would have been about thirty five or so when he married Elizabeth Mann. Was Elizabeth his second wife? According to the Mann family history Elizabeth was about seventeen when she married John. The age difference is considerable so who knows the real age of John.

As previously mentioned, John and his friend Henry Miller applied for marriage bonds the same day along with John's brother Amos and sister Elizabeth. It is strange that two brothers and a sister would be getting married at the same time. Elizabeth had permission from her father Adam Mann. These were the first marriage bonds issued by the new court of Monroe county, at George King's house May 22, 1799, two hundred years ago. Before the court of Monroe, a person had to go to Lewisburg for marriage bonds and would have taken several days according to the route taken. The day before on the first day of Monroe court John's brother Amos was appointed Constable. Money for marriage bonds was never forfeited unless just cause was found such as another wife or husband etc.

John and Henry Miller were good friends and neighbors for many years. John's son Jacob would someday marry Henry's daughter Elizabeth and they shared the same grandchildren. Many of them are buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery on Indian Creek on land once owned by Henry and his father John Miller. The Miller's were large landowners on Indian Creek. There is mention of Henry's father John being wounded during the Hockstetter massacre in the Calf Pasture area where the Millers lived for a while. Henry Miller was a cooper and made wooden vessels etc. He made a fine coffin for his friend William Ballard. About 1819 some of Henry's brothers went west to Kanawha County and in Henry's depression he sold a part of his farm for a rifle gun and rode happily down the road whistling "Leather Britches".
The old Miller-Halstead cemetery was on Henry Miller's farm. Henry and many of his family were buried there, along with several descendents of John and Elizabeth Halstead.

John and Elizabeth Mann first started married life on the ninety six acre farm adjoining his dad on Quaking Asp at Indian. James had the ninety six acres surveyed at the time he bought his farm in 1791. In one year John and Elizabeth moved further down Indian Creek where they purchased one hundred acres from James and Margaret Miller in June 1800. This was sold many years later to William Mann when the family moved to Mason County. William Mann may have been Elizabeth's brother as she only had one full brother because her mother died young. Elizabeth's parents Adam and Mary Mann conveyed one hundred twelve acres to John and Elizabeth April 6th, 1815.

John was the first school teacher in the area and he farmed. He served in the local 108th militia of Monroe County. He was called out for muster in 1805 and for unknown reasons he couldn't make the muster and Jacob Mann took his place, who in turn was replaced by Andrew Miller. A fine of twenty five cents was collected for each muster that was missed.

An old note was found in the Young papers dated November 4, 1800 showing that John and Joshua Lewis owed Phillip Ballard one pound, ten shillings for salt dug near the mouth of Indian Creek. (Phillip was a neighbor born 1722, Essex County, Virginia, the son of William and Nancy Johnson-Ballard).

It appears to me that John being much older than Elizabeth (according to the Mann history) that John could have been married to someone before Elizabeth. The 1810 Monroe census counts the family as having three sons under the age of ten and one son age ten to sixteen and a daughter age ten to sixteen. These children were born before his marriage to Elizabeth and she was too young to be their mother. John could have been married and widowed before the family came to Indian Creek. (or soon after)

The children of John and Elizabeth were James ?, Adam, Jacob, William, Sarah, Rhoda, Mann Monroe, Nancy Alice, Mary Polly, and Jackson. Most of them are proved in some way or another in old records, one or two are not but are assumed to be their children. Ages may not be accurate because ages recorded by census were sometimes off by a year or two. The children were educated probably by John. Two of his sons became teachers. The family was well thought of and none ever show up in court records except for legitimate reasons.

John had sold the farm near his dad to his brother Amos for one dollar whenever he moved further down Indian Creek near the Mann and Miller families. They bought and sold other property while living there. John bought thirty four acres plus six in April 1801, an assignee of William Maddy. This was part of a six hundred acre patent taken by James Ellison in 1792. John had a land patent of forty acres which joined the land of Samuel Lewis and Jacob Mann September 1804. (Bk 1, p 76) In 1815 he bought one hundred twelve acres from Adam Mann and sold it two years later to Frederick Baker, April 1818 (Bk D, p 400). He sold one hundred three acres to William Mann, perhaps Elizabeth's brother (Bk A, p 64). They were selling out and preparing to move to Mason County. They sold thirty three acres in 1815, part of a forty acre tract granted to John September 22, 1804. Mann's meeting house to William Mann and George Stephenson (Bk D, p 477). This property may have been near the old Primitive Baptist Church. (the meeting house)
Many people were moving westward where land was more plentiful. The last property tax John paid was 1818, Monroe County. About this time Henry Miller's brothers and the Adkins, Edwards and others were leaving, probably all together in the same wagon train going down the Midland trail. The trip took about two weeks, making about ten miles a day. John never saw Indian Creek again. About this time Henry Miller sold part of his farm for a gun.

They settled in the Arbuckle district in Mason County. John is listed in the property tax records in 1823, Mason County. He paid tax on five horses and had four males in the household. No records were found to show where the family was between 1818 and 1823. Did he stop to visit his brother Amos in Kanwha County? Perhaps not yet a landowner?

Adam found a bride and married Sarah Greenlee, April 24, 1823 in Mason County. John's daughter Rhoda married Peyton Dobbins March 24, 1823, Mason County. At this time John may have been about sixty or sixty five years old and died in the year of 1823 or 1824. He is not mentioned again in West Virginia records. This must have been an unsettling time for the family. They decided to come back to Monroe County. James Halstead and sister Rhoda Dobbins stayed in Mason County. Elizabeth and sons are mentioned in property taxes of Monroe in 1825. Adam and his wife Sarah came back and he started teaching school. William came back and taught school for two years in Monroe but went back to Mason County in 1827.

Elizabeth bought forty six acres on Backcreek from Samuel Lewis, January 18, 1825, sells it one year later to Henry Pence for one dollar. (Jacob bought the forty six acres back from Pence 1841). (Bk N, p 70). Soon after returning Elizabeth gives written permission for Sarah and Mary Polly to marry in 1825 and Jacob married Henry Miller's daughter Elizabeth. Adam and Sarah's first baby Mary Ann was born September 23, 1825.

Elizabeth and son James were listed in the Mason County property taxes in 1827 and then no more. She was young and could have remarried or they all may have moved into Ohio. Her father Adam Mann wrote in his will dated 1835, probated August 1840 that "he leaves his grandchildren-children of my deceased daughter Elizabeth one dollar as I have heretofore provided for Elizabeth in land and other personal estate". It is unknown where John and Elizabeth were buried, perhaps Mason County or Middleport, Ohio.

Elizabeth's mother died young and her father remarried to Polly Flinn. Six children were born of the second marriage who were; Sarah (William Cummings), James (Nancy Humphreys), Joseph (Rebecca Gibson), Chloe (Jonathan Gibson), John (Elizabeth Humphreys), Adam II (Mary Mann and Elizabeth Barton). Elizabeth's grandparents were Jacob Mann and Barbary Miller, of Jacob Miller, Sr.

The Mann and Miller families had crossed the Allegheny's from Rockbridge, Virginia in 1770 by an old Indian trail and eventually settled on Indian Creek. Some have written that the Mann family came from Germany, another tells that they were immigrants to William Penn's colony of Quakers in Pennsylvania. (Mann MS writes: "the Mann's are of English origin coming from Kent, England and were the ancestors of the New River Manns, one of whom was William who settled in Augusta County and was at the battle of Point Pleasant, 1774. Three of this family-Moses, Thomas and William were soldiers stationed on the Ohio shortly after the battle of Point Pleasant. There they encountered Indians who killed Thomas and badly wounded
William who escaped and died in what is now Fayette County while trying to make his way to fort Donnelly.

Jacob and Barbary Miller had settled at Hunter Springs and had four children. Barbary died at Cook's fort and was buried nearby.

Jacob Mann, Jr., and his wife Mary Kessinger were married August 24, 1779 and parents to seven sons and three daughters. Jacob was a blacksmith, farmer and Indian fighter. He built a powder mill and made powder by mixing sulphur from the Carolina's, charcoal from willow wood and saltpeter from the Maddy caves which he owned at the time. LDS 1017648. Jacob's name was on William McBrides payroll for service in 1782 at the Ohio Falls and also the payroll of Captain Charles Gatilff's company in 1783 who were called out by Lt. John Bowman from August to November. (Register of Virginians in the Revolution by Gwathmy). The DAR Patriot Index includes Jacob Man, born about 1725, wife Barbara Miller. Jacob Miller Jr., Private Scout born about 1745, wife-Mary Kessinger. Some descendents of these old pioneers are living in Monroe County as well as all over the United States.

In the lovely area of our ancestors along Indian Creek is the old Miller-Halstead cemetery on land first owned by the Millers. Beside the cemetery is a large two story red brick house once owned by the Hedley-Dowdy and Pence families. Behind the house Indian Creek rolls along as it has for centuries at the bottom of the hill. In early times an old road ran along the creek. The current road (Rt. 122) runs along in front of the house and the old cemetery.

During the summer of 1994 a chance meeting took place in the old Miller-Halstead cemetery at a time when we were there visiting. Eva Pence came by with her nephew Bob Akers and his wife Erlene. Franklin Mann dropped by to mow the grass. I met the descendents of people that I had been reading about. Each of us had ancestors buried there.

The picture on page 26 was made about 1909. Franklin Mann told me that he and his brother Leonard was born there as well as his parents and grandparents and where Franklin lived in his early years. His father Frank and aunt Molly are standing in the yard. Molly died the following year. He thinks the house was built between 1810 and 1820 by his great grandfather James (1787-1855), fifth child of the ten of Jacob Mann, Jr., (1745-1815). Upon James death the house passed to the youngest son Woodson Mann, grandfather of Franklin. Upon Woodson's death Frank (of the present Franklin) got the house and surrounding acreage and was responsible for the care of Franks mother Mary Raines Mann (1849-1908) and his sister Molly. Frank's father built a two story frame house about thirty feet to the west in 1922 and used the logs from the old house to build a barn which the current owners converted to a shop. The old log house had four large rooms, two up and two downstairs. Access to the upper level was by an outside stairway on the south end to the east of the chimney where the kitchen had been removed. The north room on the first floor ws furnished with beds and chairs probably considered a guest room or parlor. The south room was the kitchen and living area with a woodburning cook stove near the southwest corner and a large table just to the north of it. There were two beds on the North wall, one for Franklin's parents and one for he and his brother. There was a large fireplace for cooking and heating water, etc. There was an old clock, works made of wood brought from Germany. It was dismantled when Woodson lived there and turned into furniture. Franklin has a small table made from it. The ceilings were high and the clock extended through the ceiling and ceiling joists which appeared to be part of the original structure.

Franklin says that the only portion of the extensive land holdings of Jacob Mann still in the family are seventeen plus acres which he sold to his brother Leonard when Franklin sold the place in 1996 and one third acre he retains to keep the burial site of James and Lucy Mann plus six unlettered stones (grave markers). Franklin has many fond memories of the old log house.
Mariage Bond for the marriage of John Halstead and Elizabeth Mann, May 27, 1799.
Henry Miller was the surety bondsman.

Written permission for his daughter to marry from Adam Mann.
James Halstead is a mystery. James married Polly Ball July 25, 1815, in Greenbrier County, by Rev. John Alderson. Could he have been the first son of John Halstead, the male counted in the Monroe census of 1810 and counted as a male of the age twelve to sixteen? Perhaps named for grandpa James? He was too old to be a son of Amos or Benjamin. After their marriage in 1815 James and Polly disappeared from Monroe and Greenbrier county records. (Monroe county was made from Greenbrier county in 1799).

I was unable to verify who James was or who his parents were but think he was closely related to John Halstead as they all went to Mason county about the same time. Mason county records count James and Polly for two years and are not found after 1828 in West Virginia records that I could find.

Greenbrier county records show that Polly Ball was left a parcel of land by her father James Patterson in 1822 in his will. Polly and James Halstead of Mason county sold her inherited land to James Kelly and Samuel Keenan for one dollar 10-14-1822.

Greenbrier county records show a Mary Polly Patterson age nineteen married Spenser Ball July 31, 1788. (If she married at the age of nineteen it seems likely that she was born about 1769).

Greenbrier records show a James, Joseph and Mathew Patterson 1783 to 1786 and a William Ball born in Virginia about 1740 whose parents were Edward and Sarah Owens-Ball. (LDS #1597894)

There was a record found of a James Elijah Halstead born 1806, Monroe county, Virginia who died in Cincinnati, Ohio. (Who was this James)? Hopefully someone can solve the mystery of James Halstead in the future.
II. Adam was probably the first son born to John and Elizabeth in the summer of 1800 at Quaking Asp Run. They moved to the one hundred three acres purchased from James and Margaret Miller, somewhere on Indian Creek in June 1800. John Adams was President when Adam was born.

His family probably lived on Backcreek before they moved to Mason County about 1819. Adam and his brothers and sisters were educated—probably taught by his father John. Adam and his brother William were teachers and he was about nineteen when the family moved to Mason County. While they were in Mason County Adam paid twelve cents property tax on his horse.

John Halstead died in the year of 1823 or 1824. Adam married Sarah Greenlee April 24, 1823 by Rev. William George in the Arbuckle district. The family moved back to Monroe County sometime around 1824 or 1825. Adam and his brother William were teaching school in Monroe County in 1825 and Adam's first child was born September 23, 1825. Old records show Joe Stodghill paid Adam and William seventeen dollars salary. Adam's students were Elizabeth and Jackson Raines, children of Robert Raines, Washington and Sidney McMahan, children of M. McMahan. His students in 1838 were Hulda, Sarah and Henderson Mann, a child of Catherine and Rufus Miller, son of Charles Miller and Lorenzo Atha. His students in 1839 were William, Julie, Sintha, Richard and Wesley Dunbar, Elizabeth and William Gibson and the two Raines children. Subjects taught were reading, writing, spelling and arithmetic.

Adam bought one hundred acres 1833, located at the mouth of Blue Lick Creek of Hans Creek, sixty five acres on Hans Creek, 1842. In 1848 he purchased two hundred twenty nine acres on Little Bluestone, 1848. John and Susan Maddy deeded two thousand two hundred thirteen acres on Little Bluestone in 1848-1849 to Adam, five hundred twenty one acres 1851 from John Maddy. He bought land on Glade Creek, Raleigh County from B. W. and William Lilly and sold property on waters of Camp Creek to Perry Hedrick in 1871. Sold fifty acres to Michael Fleshman in 1850 and one hundred ten acres to John Ellison located in Mercer County, 1850.

Adam's wife Sarah died about 1855. Adam remarried at the age of sixty six to Mary M. Shuck, by Rev. Joseph Lilly. (grandfather of Cordia Ann Lilly-Halstead) Mary was a widow with five children and was a daughter of George and Elizabeth Osborne.

Adam died prior to 1874, his property appraisments were made December 1874 by John T. Lowe and Andrew Mann. His personal property was sold to family and friends December 1874. His daughter Sarah and son in law William S. Lilly purchased part of it. It is unknown where Adam and Sarah are buried. None of his descendents were found. The children of Adam and Sarah were Mary Ann, Granville, Nancy, Sara and John.

a. Mary Ann, born September 23, 1825, married William S. Lilly (Shoemaker Bill) in 1856. Bill remarried to Amanda (Ellison) Woodrum, July 21, 1875. Their children;

a-1 Serena Alwilda
a-2 Minerva A.
a-3 Serepta Virginia
a-4 Nancy C.
a-5 Green Lee.

(William George-Minister of Concord Baptist Church at Five Mile, Arbuckle District)
b. Granville S. born about 1827, married Dioney Clark, daughter of Ruth and Henry Clark March 8, 1855. Adam and Sarah deeded ninety acres to Granville and Dioney May 24, 1855, located on Little Bluestone. Granville enlisted in the Confederate Army February 3, 1864 by Captain McGinnis, Mercer County, Company K, 34th Battalion of Mountain Rifles. He was in Witcher's and Sweeney's Companies. His war record describe him at age 38, six foot, fair complexion, blue eyes and light hair. No further records were found.

c. Nancy.
d. Sara V. born about 1836, unmarried in 1850 census.
e. John S., born about 1841 or before. John was old enough to have been in the civil war.

I could not find the descendents of Adam and Sarah (Greenlee) Halstead who are living at the present time.
KNOW all men by these presents, that we, Jacob Halstead and
Henry Miller,
are held and firmly bound unto
John Tyler, Governor of Virginia and his successors,
for the use of the Commonwealth, in the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, to
which payment well and truly to be made we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors
and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with
our seals and dated this 21st day of April — A. D. 1876.

The condition of the above obligation is such, that whereas a marriage is shortly
intended to be solemnized between the above bound
Jacob Halstead
and Elizabeth Miller, daughter of Henry Miller
of Monroe county, if therefore, there shall be no lawful cause to obstruct the said
marriage, then the above obligation to be void; otherwise to remain in full force
and virtue.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of

Jacob Halstead

Henry Miller

Marriage Bond for Jacob Halstead and Elizabeth Miller. Her father Henry the bondsman.
To the Clerk of Monroe City
State of Virginia I wish you to issue to
Jonah Morgan a license to
give under my hand the 11th day
of November 1850.
Jacob Halstead

Jacob's permission for daughter Flora to marry Jonah Morgan

Monroe County Court
To the clerk of said county you are authorized
to issue marriage license for my
daughter Rhoda Halstead and
Andrew Mann given under
my hand this 24 the day of Sept 1851

Above: Jacob's permission for his daughter Rhoda to marry Andrew Mann. 1851.
III Jacob was born December 20, 1801. John Adams and Thomas Jefferson were Presidents that year.

Jacob and his older brothers would have known their grandparents. Jacob would have been fourteen when his grandpa James died in 1815, perhaps his grandmother was still living at that time.

Jacob was eighteen when the family moved to Mason County and about twenty four when they returned to Monroe. Jacob owned three horses in 1829. Two of his sisters married in 1825 the year of their return. Jacob married Elizabeth Miller, a girl he had known all of his life. She was the daughter of Henry Miller, old friend and neighbor of his dad's since 1799 or before.

The ancestor's of Elizabeth Miller go way back to Jacob Miller who came from Germany, born about 1702. Jacob and his parents settled about thirty miles from the Port of Philadelphia at Faulkner's Swamp. They migrated westward and along the southern fringe of the Allegheny mountains into the Shenandoah Valley settling in Rockingham County near the town of Harrisonburg. They raised a family of eight or nine who were Jacob Jr., Henry, John Sr., Christain, George, Barbary and Katherine.

About 1775 at the outbreak of the Revolutionary War the Virginia convention assembled at St. John's Church in Richmond and an expedition set out westward from that section among whom were five of Jacob Miller's family-Jacob Jr., John Sr., George, Barbary and Katherine. Barbary had married Jacob Mann. The Mann family joined the Millers at Rockingham and the westward bound pioneer's had followed a trail down the Cowpasture River through the mountains where Clifton Forge is now and out into the Appalachian Plateau of old Sweet Springs and Gap Mills on a trail used since 1749. Both families settled on Indian Creek. (Miller Family History by Everette Miller, LDS # 1017648)

John Miller Sr., born 1735 died at age ninety one and had settled on Indian Creek about three miles from Greenville. Part of John Miller's land joined that of Jacob Mann. John and Jacob took an active part in the settlements on Indian Creek and had many encounters with the Indians. The children of John Miller and his wife Barbary Mauzy (a French girl) were; Elizabeth, John Jr., Michael, Jacob, Henry, Adam, George and Daniel.

Henry Miller was the fifth child born 1774 and died 1862. The son of John Miller Sr. was a baby when his parents crossed the mountains. He and his wife Rhoda lived on part of the land granted to his father John. John lived in a large double log house across the road from the Hedley Dowdy-Pence place. Henry inherited a large acreage of the original land granted to his father until he traded part for a rifle gun. The purchase was made into two fine farms occupied by Hugh and Henry Peck.

Henry's children were Barbary, Polly, Rhoda, Anna, Charles (the gunmaker), Moses, Henry and Elizabeth who married Jacob Halstead. Henry died 1862 at age eighty six. Henry, his parents and many of his family are buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery, located on a part of the original land taken by John Miller in 1785. Everette Miller wrote that he
cut corn as a boy for fifty cents a day for owners of the estate originally owned by his great grandfather John Miller Sr. who lies buried in that very field. John Miller not only owned some of the Pence land but hundreds of surrounding acres of rich farm lands.

The five Miller families who moved west to Kanawha-Boone counties were John Jr., Jacob, George, Daniel and Moses. This was about the same time that Jacob’s uncle Amos moved to Kanawha-Boone and most likely went in the same wagon train. Their children intermarried when grown in Boone county.

By 1841 Jacob and Elizabeth owned about one hundred acres or more on Backcreek, a branch off Indian and bought property in 1865 on Backcreek from Lewis and Mary Pence. Jacob bought and sold property throughout his lifetime. One part of his land joined Henry Miller’s property. (Could this have been where Jacob had a house now behind Harold Dickson’s place which was later occupied by Jacob’s grandson William and Ellen Halstead)? Through the years Jacob bought land from Samuel Lewis, Henry Pence, George and Polly Stevenson and a lot from Isaac Mann.

Jacob and Elizabeth probably farmed and they raised their children, attended church and lived out their lives in the area where they were born and grew up. They saw four sons off to join the Confederacy and return, as well as several cousins and nephews. They had many friends and were pillars of their community. Jacob was overseer for the poor for a time.

Elizabeth died December 10, 1872 at age seventy one. Jacob remarried to Marinda Raines, January 20, 1874, daughter of James and Peggy Raines. Jacob died at age eighty eight in 1889. He left his estate to his sons John, Andrew, Allen, daughters and wife Marinda. His will was witnessed by W. W. Pence and James Ellison. Jacob and Elizabeth are buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery on Indian Creek marked by fieldstones with their names cut into the stones. We met Eva Pence on our first visit to the Miller-Halstead cemetery. Her grandfather Charles Miller is buried there, the same Charles Miller who was a brother of Elizabeth Miller, Jacob’s wife. Eva became a friend and she graciously arranged for us to visit Mrs. Adonna Dowdy. Mrs. Dowdy and her husband live in the big stone house on Indian Creek, built in 1774 by the Estill’s. It was an exciting experience for us as we had admired the house from the road. Mrs. Dowdy pointed out special places of interest such as a hiding place in the loft where previous owners hid from the Indians. Eva showed us other ceme7eries where our ancestors were buried.

The children of Jacob and Elizabeth were Peyton, Rhoda, Nancy, Flora, Mary, John A., Henry, Martha Ellen, Allen and Andrew.

a. Peyton, the first son of Jacob and Elizabeth was born about 1828, died June 17, 1847, at the age of about nineteen. Peyton is buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery.

b. Rhoda was born April 20, 1830, died March 12, 1899. Rhoda married Andrew Mann September 24, 1851, son of James and Lucy Keaton Mann (of Jacob and Mary Kessinger-Mann). Lucy, a daughter of James Keaton and Anky Ballard. The Keatons originally came from London, England. 1639. Jacob gave written permission for Rhoda to marry Andrew, born March 11, 1826. Andrew died May 27, 1899. Children; Davis, Mary Ellen, Martha, Allen, Henry, Margaret, Granville and Emily.
b-1  Davis A., born 1853, died 1933. Married Mary Mann, born 1855, died 1908.
   1-1  Cidney
   1-2  Delilah
b-2  Mary Ellen, born November 11, 1856.
b-3  Martha Elizabeth, born October 28, 1859, married John Ryan.
b-5  Henry Franklin (twin) born May 28, 1863, married Celia Houchins.
   5-1  Orwin (Gladys Coleman).
   5-2  Oscar (Virginia Lee Mays)
   5-3  Henry (Pauline Sims)
   5-4  Eva, born January 29, 1905.

b-6  Margaret, born 1865.
b-7  Granville Ashworth, born 10-1-1868, married Agnes Simms, NC.
       Died May 16, 1947. daughter Margaret ?

c.  Nancy. No further record.

d.  Flora, born 1831, died June 6, 1853 at age twenty two of TB. Jacob gave her
   written permission to marry "Joney" Morgan, 11-11-1850. They mar. 11-18-1850, 
   had a son, Taylor Morgan. Jonah was the son of Noah Morgan and Leana Fry, born 
   in Culpepper County, VA. Jacob mentions the two children of Taylor Morgan in 
   his will, not the names. Flora is buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery. Her carved 
   fieldstone is broken into three pieces and lying on the ground at this time. Jonah 
   remarried to Rachel Comer, 2-12-1856. Jonah died 1897, Rachel died 1910. They 
   are buried in the Morgan cemetery near Ronceverte. Jonah was a Private, Co. B, 
   36th Virginia Infantry, CSA.

   d-1  Taylor Morgan, born June 1853. No further records found.

Children of Jonah and Rachel were Noah, born 1860, Jonah, born 1862, Estaline, 
   born 1865, Rebecca, born 1868, Mary A. born 1870, Willie, born 1872, Naomi, 
   born 1875 and Lunda, born 1877.

e.  Mary, born 5-1836, died 7-11-1903. Married Milem Keaton, born 10-7-1836.
   Milem was the son of Anderson Keaton and Elizabeth Mann, had six sons and six 
   daughters. Johnson was the celebrated Primitive Baptist Minister for forty years.

Mary and Milem moved to Colorado. Mary died while visiting her sister Martha Ellen 
   Ballengee, near Alderson. She was survived by four sons living in the West and 
   two daughters, Mrs. M. Gibson, Raleigh County and Mrs. Neely Wilcox of Charleston. 
   Mary is buried in the Keaton cemetery near Greenville. Milem is probably buried 
   in Colorado. Children:

   e-1  Alderman born about 1858.
   e-2  Lewis J., born about 1860.
e-3 Henry W., born about 1861.
e-4 Jennings, born about 1862.
e-5 Shannon, born about 1865.
e-6 Cordelia, born about 1867

f. John Alexander, born May 28, 1838, died March 1902. Martin Van Buren was President at the time.

John lived all of his life on Indian Creek. Married Margaret Virginia Warren June 17, 1858. She was the daughter of Pathena Warren and born June 15, 1843. Margaret died in 1917. John and Jenny lived on Backcreek where his parents had lived. They occupied a large two story home near the little creek. (see page 61)

When the Civil War began John and his uncle Lorenzo enlisted at Union. They were first in Co. E of the 166th, Virginia. In a few months they both transferred to the 30th Battalion, Co. C, Captain Lowrey's First Virginia Sharpshooter's, June 8th, 1862. John was sick most of the war and was listed in a Giles County hospital in February, June and August. Was sick at home twice and finally discharged and sent home from illness, March 31, 1864. Richmond archives describe John as five foot, ten inches, blue eyes, brown hair, fair complexion, farmer. Photographs of John show us that he was an attractive man who had a short beard. John and "Lorenzy" were good friends perhaps. After the war John and the others began to rebuild their lives and started over. John's son Wellington was a baby of three when the war began and about seven when it was over in 1865.

John inherited land from his father and bought other property on Indian Creek. Some was located at the foot of Ellison Ridge from Michael and Mary Smith, 1868, sixty acres from Rachel Wiseman in 1862 and acreage from Clayton Houchins.

John and Jenny farmed, raised their children and attended the old Primitive Baptist Church on Indian Creek.

From the Monroe Watchman: John A. Halstead, Esquire, died in his home at Springfield, this county March 31, 1902 at 9:00 of pneumonia. He was a useful and respected citizen, an ex confederate and honest man. Served as J. P. for a number of years. Survived by his wife Margaret and three sons; Wellington, William Allen and Bert. Interred at the Pence cemetary. (Miller-Halstead) Margaret Virginia Halstead of Wikel died at the Hinton hospital May 5, 1917 at 10:00. Desperately ill, was taken to the hospital for surgery and died a few hours later. Margaret was buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery. Their children were Wellington, Margaret Ann, William A. Peyton D., Robert Lee and John Berton.

f-1 Wellington Granville, born 11-3-1858, died 11-1936 at age seventy seven.

Married Fannie Ballard 2-17-1885.

1-2 Letty, born 1889.
1-3 Lillian, born 1893, married Tobert White, 1920.

3-1 Robert
3-2 James
3-3 Letty Lou
3-4 JoAnne

1-4 Harry, born 3-3-2894.

f-2 Margaret Ann, born 3-4-1862. Married Charles Lively, 10-12-1880.

2-1 Myrtle Mae, born 8-13-1883, died 6-27-1957, married James W. Mann, June 1902.
   1-1 Harlan Roles, born 1905, married Glayhew Copeland.
   1-2 Ernest Lee, born 4-1907, married Sue Hambrick.
   1-3 Carrie Mae, born 5-1910, married Roy Ballard.
   3-1 Joe Ballard, born 1936.

1-4 Siebert A., born 1-1914, married Francine Tolbert.

2-2 Gertrude Lee, born 1885, married Virgil Miller 3-1904.
   2-1 Leonard Carson, born 9-1904.
   2-2 Alfred Lee, born 7-1906.
   2-3 Martha Elena, born 1909, married Richard Tolbert 1927.

2-3 Fleet Woodson, born 6-1887, married Eda C. Mann, 1913.
   3-1 Mayce Virginia, born 1915, married Kester Burton, also Charles Walker.
   3-2 Violet Ruth, born 1-1917, married Clinton Booth, 9-1935.
   3-3 Cecil Bruce, born 12-1919, married Ruth Light, 1942.
   3-4 Phillip Arnold, born 11-1921, married to Edan ? and Macie Owens.
   3-5 Fleet W. born 8-1924, married Catherine Ballard 11-1946.
   3-9 Margaret Ann, born 4-1939, married David Lane, 4-1958.

f-3 William Allen, born 8-15-1864, died 6-30-1929 at age sixty four of TB.
Married Mahalia Comer, 4-1884, daughter of Samuel Comer and Mary Hutchinson-Comer, born 8-17-1886, died 12-2-1947 at age eighty one.

3-1 Arthur Edgar, born 4-14-1885, died 10-1955. Married Myrtle Mae Bernard, 1912.
   1-1 Dorothy Lee, born 1917, died 1918.
   1-2 Arthur Edgar, Jr., born 1920, married Lucy Trythe.

3-3 Claude Monroe, born 12-1888, died 9-1966. Married Clara Zerkey 7-4-1936.
3-1 William Edgar, born 3-8-1941.
3-2 James Monroe, born 9-20-1943.

3-4 Mary Virginia, born 5-6-1892, died 9-1958. Married Ira Lee Coulter, 12-23-1913.
   4-1 Leatha Katherine, born about 1915, married Emmett Walker.
      1-1 Martha
      1-2 Sandra
      1-3 Katherine
      1-4 Nancy

4-2 Eunice Pearl, born about 1919, married Bert Vaughn 1948.

3-5 Minnia Alta, born 3-12-1905, died 12-27-1983, at seventy eight.
   Married Herbert Broyles, 10-27-1926, son of Andy and Sara Riner Broyles.

   1-1 Dewey Jr.
   1-2 Stephen
   1-3 Cathy

f-4 Peyton D, born 7-20-1867, died 1-25-1893, at age thirty. Married to Ann Blankenship. Peyton is buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery.

4-1 Willie Virginia, born 1896, married Coran Ashley Wiseman 1914.
   1-1 Frances, born 1915, died 1960. Married Charles ?
   1-2 Dorothy, born 1919, married Howard Price, 1938.
   1-3 Rosemary, born 1924, married James Turner.

f-5 Robert Lee, born 3-4-1870, died 10-10-1898 at twenty eight, typhoid.
   Married Mary Sue Thomas, 6-14-1893, daughter of James and Anna Maddy-Thomas. Robert is buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery.
   5-1 Shelby T., born 1894.
   5-2 Doris Lee, born 1896.
   5-3 Ralph Dean, born 1898.

From the Monroe Watchman: Robert Lee Halstead, son of John A. Halstead, Esquire, died at his home at Hunter Springs, 12-10-1898 of fever at age twenty eight. He was a worthy young man and leaves a wife and three little children.

f-6 John Berton, born 12-20-1872, died 3-16-1924 of pneumonia. Married Mattie Thomas 10-7-1900, daughter of James and Anna Maddy-Thomas
   6-1 Myrtle, born 1904.

From the Monroe Watchman: Friends were distressed by the death of John B. Halstead which occurred at his home at Huntington, 3-16-1924. He had moved to Huntington a number of years ago. He was a brother of William A. of Wikel and Mrs. W. M. Comer of Greenville.
Henry of Jacob was born June 1840. Enlisted in Captain Lowrey's Centerville Rifles June 8, 1861 at Indian Creek. Transferred to Chapman's Battery May 1, 1864 by the order of Brig. General William E. Jones. (Richmond archives) Henry may have lived in Greenup, Kentucky. No further records. May have had a son named Beecher. (See addenda for more about Henry)

Martha Ellen was born September 20, 1842, died April 5, 1923 at age eighty. She married John Wallace of Kentucky, August 14, 1862. They were parents of two children.
Being divorced from John Wallace, Martha Ellen remarried to Squire Mann, April 26, 1867. Squire was married previously to Julia Ann Green and also Elizabeth Lively, 1862. Squire was the son of James Mann and Lucy Keaton. Martha and Squire were parents to six children. In her old age after Squire had died Martha married Herndon Ballengee. They lived at Clayton and are buried there along with some of Martha's children.

William Edgar Wallace, born 4-6-1866, died 1-3-1943. Married Julia Hallie Davis. 12-21-1890 at Greenville. Julia was born 4-25-1872 at Lindside, Monroe County, died 1-18-1943. They are buried in the Clayton cemetery. Their marriage took place at the home of Julia's parents, Mr. and Mrs. George Washington Davis by Rev. George Parker. The groom had encountered many difficulties in reaching his bride prior to the ceremony including snow storms and lack of horses on which to make the trip. The bride being under age had to have a permit from her parents whereby her little brother plucked a feather from an old gander from which a quill was fashioned. The couple resided at Hinton and later at Clayton. William was a brakeman for the Chesapeake Railway Company. They were parents of twelve children.

1-1 Mae, born 1891, married Harvey Tolbert.
1-2 John, born 3-18-1895, died 1965, married Nora Thompson.
1-3 Rosie K., born 4-4-1897, died 11-8-1983. Married Ray Hamm 7-7-1915.
1-5 Alma Ellen, born 1902, married Zack Hamm.
1-6 Florence Lee, born 6-11-1904, married Claude Ray Allen, 4-8-1925 at Oak Hill. Claude died 8-8-1955. He was the son of Levi Allen and Mary Ellen Brown-Allen. Buried at the Oak Hill Highlawn Memorial Park. Children:


1-1 Linda Juanita, born 10-16-1946, Beckley WV. She is a Nurse and also volunteers at a shelter for homeless women and children. Linda loves to travel and collect antiques and was very helpful in getting her family history together.
1-2 Jacqueline Lee, born 6-22-1948, at Beckley, WV.
   Married James F. Cox, 7-26-1969.
   2-1 Shawn Christopher, born 6-10-1972, SC.
   2-2 Erin Michael, born 6-11-1976, SC.

1-3 Lance Ray Powers, born 10-29-1949, Beckley.
   Married Sharon Pennington, 5-27-1972.
   3-1 Shelly Jean, born 1-13-1979, Charleston.

6-2 Jennings Ray Allen, born 10-3-1927 at Prudence, died 1983.
   Married Betty Miles, 4-15-1950.
6-3 Charlotte Wallace Allen, born 10-28-1937 at Prudence.

1-7 Carl Wallace, born 1906, died 9-1908 at Clayton.
1-10 Oma Wallace, born 7-3-1914, died 12-28-1938.
1-12 William Eugene Wallace, born 9-1921, died 1922.

i. Elizabeth Wallace, first daughter of Martha and John Wallace. There are no records found at this time regarding Elizabeth and her family. They are probably living in West Virginia.


m. Flora Belle Mann, born 1871, married George Ballengee. Eight children.

n. Henry "Oat" Mann, born 1879, married Zora Harrah.

o. Luther Mann, married Tina Morgan. Seven children.

A story handed down in the family tells us that; Martha Ellen first fell for a dashing young southern cavalry soldier in the Confederate Army.

John Wallace was encamped with his regiment near Greenville and was buying supplies from Jacob Halstead (Martha's father) who was one of the gentry of his day. Martha Ellen who was sought after by the rural swains was heartfree and the two became acquainted, fell in love and married. A daughter blessed their union about 1866. John decided to leave West Virginia and join his kindred in Kentucky. His wife who was six months pregnant with their second child did not take to the idea so they agreed to disagree without any fuss or trouble. John left her all their property and rode away to Kentucky. After his departure a son was born and known as William Wallace.
Some years later Mrs. Wallace procured a divorce and remarried to Squire Mann. They were parents of six children. They lived happily until Mr. Mann died in 1884. After several years Martha Ellen married Mr. Herndon Ballengee and they lived near Clayton until he died.

The two children, William Wallace and Elizabeth grew up and each one married. Elizabeth's husband William Houchins a traveling salesman made long trips away from home and while in Kentucky one day he determined to look Mr. Wallace up. After making inquiries he found that Mr. Wallace was a man of prominence in the community and wealthy. William hired a rig and drove to the Wallace home and met Mr. Wallace and his wife who were very congenial people and they enjoyed dinner and conversation. After dinner the two men went to the barn to feed the horses. At this time William Houchins told Mr. Wallace that he was his son in law. Mr. Houchins was treated like a son and was invited again for a speedy return with his family. A few months later they all went to Kentucky and were treated royally and had a big dinner at which about seventy five relatives sat down to a feast.

After John Wallace's wife died in Louisa, KY, he came back to West Virginia to visit Martha, and his son William and daughter Elizabeth and their families. Martha Halstead-Ballengee died April 1922. John said he loved her very much and wanted to marry her again but he had waited too long. She was eighty years old. John was with her when she died. (Written August 12, 1912, author unknown).

Accompanying this condensed story was a xerox picture of Martha which showed that she was a lovely elderly woman. No descendant could be found until the last minute and then Linda Powers and I were introduced. Linda was as happy to learn something about her great, great grandmother as I was to find one of Martha's descendent. She provided the information about William Edgar Wallace and his family.

Allen H. Halstead, son of Jacob and Elizabeth was born April 1846. He enlisted in the Confederate Army when he was about seventeen-April 8, 1863 at Narrows, VA. Four days previously his brother Andrew had enlisted. Allen was in S. B. Chapman's Company B, Virginia's 26th Infantry Bn. Also was in Company F and Lowrey's, Bryan and Chapman's field artillery. Lowrey's recruits came from Greenville, boarded and drilled on Robert Shanklin's property. Company's A B and C joined Heth's army at New River then joined General Loring and John McCausland in the 22nd and 36th Virginia Infantry. Allen and Andrew were reported AWOL at Lynchburg. Allen being a prisoner of war at Lynchburg. He was later released. These company's were in the battles of Dry Creek, Winchester-October 19, 1864, Cedar Creek and New Market. Lowrey's men served well and were honored in Monroe's county veterans in 1901.

In these company's there were seventeen Mann's, five Wiseman's, seven Miller's, three Meek's, the Halsteads and many others from Monroe County. Allen and Andrew took the oath of amnesty April 1, 1865. Allen was twenty-six, six foot, blue eyes and light hair. Allen married Margaret A. Campbell, October 29, 1863.
i-1 Elliott N., son of Allen was born December 5, 1865, died February 20, 1930. Elliott was a school teacher. Married to Rosa Davis, March 17, 1886. They are buried at Hunter Springs.

1-1 Clarence L. born December 1887, died July 1959. Married Zora Mann, July 24, 1917. She was born May 1889, died March 1955. Clarence operated a store at Mt. Hope and a mercantile business at Ballengee. Clarence and Zora are buried in the Keaton cemetery.

1-1 Elliott N.
1-2 Janis-Hall.

1-2 Ray J., born November 20, 1890. Superintendent of WVC and C Company near Logan.
1-3 Mary Katherine, born February 22, 1892. Married J. D. Johnston, August 20, 1913 and lived at Sinks Grove.
1-4 Kester H., born June 16, 1895. An electrician, lived at Huntington. Elliott's second marriage was to Lucretia Elizabeth ?, March 7, 1927, of Mercer County.

i-2 Davis A. of Allen, was born 1867. Married Laura Mann. April 25, ? She was the daughter of Griffin and Lucy Mann. Laura died of a heart attack April 4, 1911. They lived on Indian Creek, above the road at Henry Miller's place. (Later was the Hedley-Dowdy and Pence place)

2-1 Wilbur G., married Sylvia Adkins.
2-2 Ruth A.
2-3 Lucy B.
2-4 Mary P.
2-5 Lonnie T.
2-6 Nellie M.
2-7 Glenna V.

i-3 Lonnie S. of Allen, born January 8, 1870, died March 26, 1888 at age eighteen. Buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery.

i-4 Henry Butts, of Allen, born August 1, 1872, died August 19, 1956 at age eighty four. Married Amanda Smith, May 14, 1892. Daughter of William and H. Smith. Born about 1879, died September 2, 1903, in childbirth. Amanda is buried in the Keaton cemetery. Henry remarried to Elsie Martha Martin, October 1910. She was born November 21, 1881, died April 17, 1956. A daughter of William Martin. Henry had a sawmill at Hans Creek. They attended the Indian Creek Baptist Church.

1-1 Henry Allen, born March 9, 1940.
1-2 George Dewette, born and died June 12, 1949.
1-3 Harold Graham, born June 12, 1951.

4-3 Lucille, born about 1918, died 1975.
    Married Hilda Jean Meredith June 4, 1949. They lived at Fairlea.
    Robert was a WW II soldier and a carpenter. Buried in the Keaton cemetery.

4-1 Robert.
4-2 Gerald.
4-3 Judy McFall
4-4 Cathy.
4-5 Crystal Yates, Lewisburg.

j. Andrew T. of Jacob was born about 1847. Married to Angeline Mitchell,
    November 9, 1865, daughter of James Mitchell. Born about 1850, died January
    17, 1907 at Bluefield. Andrew enlisted in the Confederate Army March 4, 1863.
    He took the oath of amnesty April 1, 1865. He was in Lowrey's, Bryan's
    and Chapman's Battery of the Virginia Artillery. Andrew was five foot, four
    inches, dark hair and complexion, grey eyes. Andrew and Angeline may have
    adopted a child-Nora Wiseman.

This concludes the family of Jacob and Elizabeth Halstead. It took years
to collect this information which came from many different sources.
I didn't find everyone.
WILLIAM HALSTEAD, SON OF JOHN AND MARGARET, WITH WIFE ELLEN.

HOME OF JOHN AND MARGARET HALSTEAD, ON BACKCREEK AT INDIAN CREEK.
Photos provided by Dewey Broyles.
IV William, presumed to be about the fourth son of John Halstead was born about 1802 in Monroe County. He was about seventeen when the family moved to Mason County in 1818. He and his brothers came back to Monroe in 1825 and Adam and his brother William taught school. William taught in the years 1825 and 1826, the Blevins and Folden children. William and his mother Elizabeth moved a second time to Mason County about 1827 and stayed there presumably, or perhaps moved elsewhere.

William married Evey (Ricey) Edwards, May 1, 1831 in Mason County by Rev. William George. Evey may have been of kinship to the Isaac Edwards family, whose parents being Rice and Charity Edwards. William and Evey were married in the Arbuckle District. William was a pioneer of Mason County and was a carpenter. He bought land at twelve and a half cents an acre, three hundred seventy five-point fifty eight acres, February 3, 1834 on Five Mile Branch, east of Point Pleasant, one hundred acres on Nine Mile Branch, one hundred eighty six acres on Nine Mile Branch about the year of 1839 and twenty acres on the Right Fork of Nine Mile Branch about 1841 along the Kanawha River.

It is unknown when or where William died, perhaps before 1856. Evie was a widow when she died in Gallipolis, Ohio, September 22, 1893.


John served with the Union Army, driving team and caring for the post at Gallipolis, Ohio. He was a school trustee in the Arbuckle District and was age thirty eight in the 1870 Mason County census. In 1880 the family was living in Mason County about ten miles west of Point Pleasant, Brighton, WV.

a-1 George W., born March 31, 1857, died October 13, 1858, Mason Co.

a-2 Clinton, born May 24, 1858.

a-3 Mary M. born June 7, 1862.

a-4 Lucy E., born October 1, 1865.

a-5 Jessie Frank, born July 8, 1868, married Bishie Burns.

  5-1 Ruth E. born 1900
  5-2 Nellie M., born 1902.
  5-3 Frank, born 1905.
  5-4 Francis M., born 1906.
  5-5 Ronald, born September 1913.

a-6 Nettie M., born February 18, 1873.

a-7 Harriett M. born December 16, 1877.

a-8 Sidney L. G., born November 25, 1879, died May 18, 1901.

a-9 Frances, born 1907. Adopted.

b. Ami E., born 1834, Mason County.

c. Abner, born 1837, married Rhoda F. Dobney, February 6, 1863, Gallia County, Ohio. Mason County census of 1870: Abner age thirty three, Arbuckle District.

  c-1 Sarah A., born about 1864.
c-2 William E., born about 1867

\[ c-3 \text{ James L, born about 1870} \]

d. Mary E., born about 1838. (1850 Mason Co. census)
e. Elizabeth F., born about 1841

f. Isaac B, born 1843 (Ferryman)

This concludes the family of William, of John and Elizabeth Mann-Halstead.
Marriage bond issued for Sarah Halstead and William Mann.

Written permission for the marriage by Sarah's mother Elizabeth Mann-Halstead.

Moses Mann was a witness.

KNOW all men by these presents, that we William Mann

and Sarah Mann

are held and firmly bound until

James Pleman

Governor of Virginia and his successors;

for the use of the Commonwealth, in the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, to

which payment well and truly to be made we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors

and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with

our seals and dated this 17th day of April A.D. 1825

The condition of the above obligation is such, that whereas a marriage is shortly

intended to be solemnized between the above bound

William Mann and Sarah Halstead

At Monroe county, if therefore, there shall be no lawful cause to obstruct the said

marriage, then the above obligation to be void; otherwise to remain in full force

and virtue.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of:

Moses Mann

April the 18th 1825 This is to certify

that I do this day agree for the clerk of

Monroe County to issue a Licence for my

Daughter Sury to get married here to J. S. aforesaid as above mentioned in the

 Presence of

Henry Mann

Moses Halstead

John Gilbert
Sarah, daughter of John and Elizabeth was born September or December 20, 1804. She died November 13, 1878 at age seventy four at Springfield, Monroe County. Sarah married William Mann, April 1825. They applied for a marriage bond April 11, 1825. The surety bondsmen were William and Henry Mann. William was born January 11, 1805, died December 13, 1892 at age eighty seven. Elizabeth gave her written permission, witnessed by Henry Mann, Moses Mann and John C. Maddy. (Moses Mann of the Monroe Mann's) Sarah's husband was the son of John Mann and Millie Harvey-Mann. In 1825 her mother Elizabeth and brother William went back to Mason County. Her mother Elizabeth had sold one hundred three acres to Sarah and William, part of a survey made for James Miller. It was probably here that Sarah and her husband built a home and raised their children.

a. Andrew Jackson, son of Sarah and William was born November 24, 1828, died at Mound City, Missouri, March 3, 1898. He married Julia Mann April 15, 1851, a daughter of James Mann. She was born December 1833, died April 16, 1891 at Mound City, Missouri.
   a-1 Virginia
   a-2 Lulu
   a-3 Elizabeth
   a-4 William
   a-5 Letcher
   a-6 Henry
   a-7 Ettie, married George Conway of Bigelow, Missouri.

b. Marinda, born about 1830 to 1832, in Monroe County. She married Flemming Cummings, March 7, 1848, in Madison County, Indiana. They had a daughter. Marinda remarried to Samuel Chapman, December 15, 1855, December 15, 1855, Monroe County. They had a son.
   b-1 Mary L. Cummings, born November 27, 1848.
   b-2 Haslet R. Chapman, born 1857, Monroe County.

c. Caroline V. was born 1835. She married John Noble, June 18, 1861. John was the son of B. B. and Catherine Noble. born in Bedford County, 1832.

d. Rhoda was born 1837, died February 8, 1854, at age sixteen.

e. Washington Tyler, born 1842, died 1819, at age seventy seven. He married Mary Catherine Crews, May 1869. He was postmaster and they lived at Hunter Springs.
   e-1 John, born about 1871. Killed in a train accident.
   e-2 M. Ellen. Married a Calloway.


h. Martha, born August 30, 1849 or January 8, 1850, CA.
VI Rhoda was born about 1805 on Indian Creek. She was about fourteen when her family moved to Mason County. She married Payton Dobbins, March 23, 1824, in Mason County by Rev. William George. She and her husband remained in Mason County. No further records were found and their family is unknown. William George—Baptist Minister, Concord Baptist Church at Five Mile.

VII Mann Monroe, son of John and Elizabeth, birthdate unknown. He may have been born about 1815 to 1820. There is no proof of his birthdate or if he was their son. LDS Ancestral files say he is their son. He moved to Mason County and was counted in the census there in 1840—one male and one female in the household of Mann Monroe, both age twenty to thirty. He married Harriett Polly (Pauley ?) March 1840. No further records found.
VIII Nancy, daughter of John and Elizabeth was born about 1809, died May 7, 1853. She married Gholson (Gholston) Mann, April 19, 1833. They had six children. It is unknown when or where Nancy died. After Nancy died Gholson remarried to Delilah Miller, daughter of Charles Miller and Mary Peters. Three children were born of the second marriage.

a. Minerva I. born 1834, died 1898, married Joel Morgan, a widower with six children. They married February 3, 1857. He was the son of Noah and Leana Fry-Morgan. Joel was born May 1826, died 1904.

   a-1 Noah (Bud) Davis, born 1859, died 1933. Wife was Rebecca.
   a-2 Nancy Ellen, born 1860, married James Morgan.
   a-3 Lewis, born 1863, married Virginia Hicks.
   a-4 Eliza, born 1864, married Charles Masters.
   a-5 Griffin, born 1865, died 1888. Married Cora Hicks.
   a-6 Alcinda, born 1866, married Isaac Morgan.
   a-7 Margaret Jane, born 1867, married Davis Mann.
   a-8 Rhoda, born 1869, married Robert Morgan.
   a-9 Greenville, born 1871, married Amy Morgan also Cynthia Pauley.
   a-10 Andrew Wellington, born June 21, 1871, died September 18, 1934. Married Hassie Martin November 12, 1900. Their daughter Lula Mae, born November 10, 1903 married Perry Webster Pauley, May 22, 1922. Perry was the son of Emily Halstead and John Pauley. See Emily of Alexander Halstead.
   a-11 Lillie B., born 1874.
   a-12 Amanda, born 1876, married Napoleon Martin.

b. Samuel, born 1837.


   c-1 Josie, married John Loomas.
   c-2 Laura, married Davis Halstead.
   c-3 Wilbur, lived at Huntington.
   c-4 Allen, married Nadine Garten.
   c-5 Dewey.
   c-6 Nannie.
   c-7 Amanda, married Wilsie Miller.

d. Davidson G., born September 1841, died 1907. Married Alice Ballard, daughter of James Ballard and Susan Mann-Ballard. Davidson and Alice rode their horses to Pearisburg, Va., to get married. They lived at Cook's Run.

d-1 Annie Cornelia.
   d-2 Josephine E., born September 25, died December 15, 1884.
   d-3 Susan.
   d-4 Elliott George, born December 29, 1886, died October 16, 1959.

   e-1 Richard.
   e-2 Maronia.
   e-3 William H.
   e-4 Mary Elizabeth.
   e-5 Walter.
   e-6 Caroline.
   e-7 Lewis.
   e-8 Margaret.
   e-9 Henrietta.
   e-10 Charles S.
   e-11 John.
   e-12 Ernest.

f. Allen H., born June 24, 1846, died 1921. Married Mary Ellen Ballard, the daughter of James Mann and Susan Mann-Ballard. Mary Ellen was born November 1848, died May 1899. They lived at Cook's Run. Allen was a Confederate soldier, Chapman's Battery.

   f-1 Henry.
   f-2 Lewis.
   f-3 Charles.
   f-4 James.
   f-5 Mary Elizabeth.
   f-6 John S.
   f-7 Minnie.
   f-8 Rose.

The children of Gholson and Delilah Miller were Jenny, born 1867, William J. born 1868, married Sarah Harvey, Mary Ellen, born 1874.
IX Mary "Polly" daughter of John and Elizabeth, was born about 1811, no birth record was found. Mary died in 1862 at age of fifty one, of cancer. Mary married James Hanon Kessinger January 20, 1829. James was born 1806, died August 15, 1878, at age seventy two of heart problems. James was the son of Mathias Kessinger and Mollie Ballard. The Kessinger's came to Greenbrier County, 1770. Four were in the battle at Point Pleasant in 1774; Andrew, Andrew Sr., Andrew Jr., and Mathias.

Mary's mother Elizabeth gave her written permission to marry and signed her name as Elizabeth Edwards. Elizabeth was widowed and still young in 1829 and perhaps had remarried to an Edwards in Mason County. She was counted in the Mason County property tax in 1827 and married shortly after? Elizabeth's son William married Evey Edwards of Mason County a year or so later.

After Mary Polly died James Kessinger remarried to Margaret Broyles, March 10, 1862, daughter of Solomon and Sarah Thompson-Broyles. (There were five James Kessinger's).

a. Emily, born 1833, married Henry Clark December 27, 1850.

b. Ricey Ann, born about 1834, married William Miller, Mary 3, 1860 also Michael Young, One daughter.

   b-1 Minnie Young, born 1876, died 1952, married Preston Chambers.

c. Mary Susan, born about 1845, married George W. Ballard, November 28, 1867.

d. John Miller, born 1848, married Mary Ellen Kounz.

e. William Leonidas, born 1849, married Margaret Broyles.

f. Malinda J., born 1855, married Charles M. Morgan of Irish Corner, December 23, 1869. She was the great grandmother of Billy Joe Martin, of Conyers, Georgia. Billy Joe married Elva Pauley, daughter of Lula Mae and Perry W. Pauley.

(Mary Kessinger's death is recorded in Mason County records)
X Jackson Halstead, presumed to be a son of John and Elizabeth is listed in the IGI records of LDS Family History Library as being born 1790, at Springfield, son of John and Elizabeth Halstead. (Monroe County) If this is correct he would have been four years old when counted in the Greenbrier County tithables of 1786, nine in 1799.

The 1810 census of Monroe lists two children age sixteen or older in the household of John and Elizabeth. John could have been widowed when he married Elizabeth.

The above mentioned record is the only one that mentions Jackson Halstead.


This concludes the family of John and Elizabeth Halstead.

Descendents of John and Elizabeth-Mann Halstead of Indian Creek

Left: Carrie Ballard and son Joe with Carrie's great granddaughter Leta Cullete of Ballard, WV.

Right: Dewey and Linda Broyles with daughter Cathy and son Stephen of Lindside, WV.

Violet and Clint Booth of Lindside, WV.
CHAPTER SIX
AMOS AND NANCY ELLIS-HALSTEAD

(Son of James)
Amos, was born probably between 1765 and 1778 and was a young man when George Washington became President in 1789.

Amos, presumed to be the second son of James Halstead appears in records a year or so after his brother John. There is no written proof to show that Amos was a son of James. He lived at the same place as James, John and Benjamin. John sold Amos his ninety five acre farm for one dollar when John moved further down on Indian Creek. Amos sold it to Benjamin for one dollar when he and his wife Nancy moved to Kanawha County. Amos, John and sister Elizabeth all went together to the new court of Monroe County to apply for their marriage bonds on the same day, May 22, 1799. It is safe to say that Amos was the son of James and brother to John, Elizabeth and Benjamin.

Monroe County property tax records show that Amos paid tax on two horses in 1799, twenty three cents. James and John were visited by the tax collector the same day as Amos in the same district. (Thirty nine and one half) Benjamin was eighteen that year and paid no tax.

Amos was probably in the local militia as all able bodied men were required to be at some time or another, which would have been the 108th of Monroe, after 1799. He was appointed Constable the day the new Court began in Monroe County, May 21, 1799. (One notation I found in old records was that Amos was in Caperton's Company, serving with Byrside, Clark and Farley).

The American Revolution had ended about the time the Halsteads first appeared in western Virginia records in 1786 and they may have been there a short time before. Amos, John, Elizabeth and Benjamin were all born somewhere else before coming to Indian Creek. All were literate and had received an education either from their parents or in a school wherever they were living prior to their arrival in Greenbrier County. Education and religious preference was usually instilled by the parents, which speaks well of James and his wife (whoever she was). In those days many people were illiterate. John was the first school teacher in the area and Benjamin was an Elder or some say a Preacher. He was active in the Primitive Baptist church and is listed in an old 1830 pamphlet regarding the church Association held at Mann's meeting house on Indian Creek.

As stated before, Benjamin told the census taker for two decades that he was born in North Carolina in the year of 1781. The family was not found in North Carolina records and may have been there for a short time. Perhaps he thought he was in North Carolina, and was not. There was a border dispute along the Wilderness Trail from south western Virginia through the Cumberland Gap into Kentucky first marked by Daniel Boone. The disputed border ran in and out of Kentucky, Tennessee, Virginia and North Carolina. Sullivan County, North Carolina became Tennessee and Washington County, Virginia-West Virginia.

Amos and his bride to be had their marriage intentions published by banns a few weeks prior to the day all parties rode to the clerks office for their marriage bonds. Usually a notice was posted at a church or public place etc. The Clerk misspelled his name as Alstadt, which was a common mistake made several times in the early days.
Amos and Nancy Ellis were married the following Sunday, by Rev. John Alderson. Nancy was the daughter of Owen and Christina Van Doren-Ellis of Wolf Creek. Her father served in Trimble's Company during the Revolution, also in John Stuart's Company who were in the battle at Point Pleasant in 1774. Owen Ellis owned an eight hundred acre plantation on Wolf Creek.

Amos and Nancy started married life near his father, James or perhaps in the house just vacated by his brother John when John gave Amos his farm for one dollar. They continued to live in the same place until about 1812, and paid property taxes there until they moved to Kanawha County. They are not mentioned again in old records after 1812. The 1810 census of Monroe show a family with three daughters under age of ten and three sons under age of ten. His children knew their grandparents.

Pioneer's were moving westward where land was more plentiful. Amos and his family traveled down the Midland Trail, probably with other families in a wagon train. The trip took about two weeks, making about ten miles a day. The Miller, Adkins, and Edwards families migrated to Kanawha County about the same time. The Miller family settled in the same area as Amos and Nancy.

John Miller and his wife Sarah Carter, moved to Boone County. Their daughter Lucinda married James, son of Amos. Benjamin, son of Amos married Barbara Miller, daughter of Daniel and Elizabeth Comer-Miller. Elizabeth, daughter of Amos married Isaac Miller. These Miller families had left Monroe County about the same time. There were marriages between the Halsteads and Millers from the earliest times. Several of are buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery on Indian Creek, on land owned by Henry Miller, their brother who stayed in Monroe County.

Montgomery County, Virginia extended into the Boone County area around 1800, then it became Giles County around 1810 to 1820. While it was Montgomery County Kanawha County was formed from Greenbrier and Montgomery Counties, 1788.

Logan County was formed 1824 from parts of Giles County, Virginia, Tazwell County, Virginia and Cabell County Virginia—which was formed in 1809 from Kanawha. Boone County was formed from parts of Cabell, Kanawha and Logan in 1847.

Amos was granted one hundred acres May 3rd, 1823, on the West Fork of Little Cole River, a branch of big Kanawha about ten poles from Millcreek, a branch of West Fork just above said Halstead's house on Sand Branch. Witnessed by James Pleasants at the Governor's Virginia office, September 8, 1824. (Richmond Archives)

Amos and Nancy lived out their lives in Boone County. Amos may have died between 1830 and 1840, may be buried in the Adkins-Halstead cemetery on the Left Fork of Williams Fork, Boone County. In a poll taken for an election to be held April 22, 1841, were the names of the sons of Amos; Benjamin. James and also Isaac Miller. Amos was not listed.

Nancy was a widow age sixty nine in 1853, living with her daughter Elizabeth and son in law, Isaac Miller. It is unknown when Nancy died. Tom Halstead, a descendent from Iverson, from Amos says that Amos and Nancy are probably buried at Rock Creek on State Route 3, east of Danville.
The children of Amos and Nancy were; James, Joseph, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Ruth and Nancy.

James, the first son of Amos and Nancy was born 1800, perhaps named for his grandfather James. He knew his grandparents until he was about twelve years old. They lived on the adjoining farm of his grandparents. They lived on Quaking Asp Run at Indian Creek. It was renamed in later years to Stinking Lick Creek. John Adams was President when James was born. The family moved to Kanawha-Boone County when James was about twelve or thirteen.

James grew up in Boone County and eventually married Lucinda Miller, August 5th, 1821. She was born 1806, the daughter of John Miller, Jr., of John Miller, Sr., who had also moved from Indian Creek. James died July 1868. Lucy died July 1888.

Their children:

   a-1 Elizabeth, born about 1842.
   a-2 Sarah, born 1843.
   a-3 Mary, born 1845.
   a-4 John, born April 1846.
   a-5 Lucy, born December 1847.
   a-6 Andrew Jackson, born April 1848.
   a-7 James, born 1851.
   a-8 Hansford, born 1853.
   a-9 Emily E., born August 12, 1854.
   a-10 Serena, born 1856.
   a-11 Amanda, born May 25, 1858.
   a-12 Peter, born May 1860.
   a-13 Mandeville, born December 1862.
   a-14 Nancy, born 1866.

   b-1 Tacy Jane, born 1845. Kanawha County.
   b-2 Samuel, born 1847. Kanawha County.
   b-3 Caroline, born 1848. Kanawha County.
   b-4 Oliver P., born 1851. Boone County.
   b-5 Nancy, born 1854. Boone County.
   b-6 George B., born June 4, 1858.

c. Amos, born 1826, Logan County. Enlisted May 2, 1862 in Company I, 22nd Virginia Infantry, Confederate Army. Took the oath of amnesty at Charleston, WV, on July 14, 1865 at age forty. Post war record says he enlisted in Company C. (The 22nd Infantry by Terry Lowrey) Donnie Staats of Charleston said Amos was in the Union Army and left the battle at Gettysburg and walked home.
Amos married Eliza Ann Pauley, 1842. She died October 20, 1872, was the daughter of Joseph and Agga Pauley. Amos remarried to Cynthia (Alford) Byrnsaide, September 4, 1873.

    c-1 Martha, born 1843.
    c-2 Peter Anderson, born 1845, died October 13, 1859 at fourteen.
    c-3 Benton, born 1847.
    c-4 Angeline, born 1849.
    c-5 Nancy Ann, born October 23, 1853.
    c-6 Louvilla, born January 23, 1856.
    c-7 Lucy E., born May 21, 1859.
    c-8 Matilda, born 1861.
    c-9 Jefferson Davis, born 1865.
    c-10 Emily, born 1867.
    c-11 Eliza A., born 1869.

d. Elizabeth, born about 1828, married William Adkins.

e. Thomas, born 1830, married Lucinda Miller, daughter of Moses and Ruth Miller.

        e-1 Calvin, born March 19, 1854.
        e-2 Benjamin, born October 10, 1856.

f. Jane, born September 20, 1832, died December 3, 1902. Married John Dolin Jr. John was born September 25, 1826 and died October 9, 1913. Six children.

        f-1 Mary Dolin, born 1850.
        f-2 Martha, born December 8, 1853.
        f-3 Julia, born 1855.
        f-4 Venila, born 1856.
        f-5 Hiram, born June 18, 1857.
        f-6 Andrew Jackson, born July 22, 1858.


        g-1 William R. Sisson, born July 15, 1854.
        g-2 Causby Sisson, born 1857.
        g-3 Polly Sisson, born 1859.

h. Rachel, born 1836, married Floyd Holstein, August 14, 1859. Son of Thomas and Martha Collins-Holstein. Floyd died in the Civil war-Union Army.
i. Davis Halstead, born 1838, married Frances Elizabeth Holstein-Dolin. A daughter of Thomas and Martha Collins.
   
i-1 Meletes.
i-2 Evermont, born September 8, 1872, died 1965.
i-3 Fannie.


k. Martha, born 1840.

l. Emily, born 1842, married John Wallen, January 9, 1889.

   
   m-1 Ora Lee, born December 20, 1873.
m-2 Espaniah, born 1876.
m-3 Calahil, born July 20, 1879, died August 12, 1975.
m-4 James M., born July 1, 1881.
m-5 Peter Preston, born October 22, 1884, died March 22, 1964.


   
o-1 Mary Alice, born 1865, married William Adkins, son of William and Eliza Halstead.

(Many times a soldier was reported as deserted who had been captured and was a POW)

This concludes the family of James, of Amos and Nancy Ellis.
II. Joseph Halstead, son of Amos and Nancy was born about 1804 on Quaking Asp Run at the first settlement made by the Halsteads. That year Aaron Burr killed Alexander Hamilton in a duel and Lewis and Clark reached the Pacific Ocean the following year. Joseph's cousin Alexander Hamilton, son of his uncle Benjamin was born a year later. The two boys lived on adjoining farms and no doubt went to school together. Thomas Jefferson was President at the time. Joseph was about eight or nine when his parents moved to Kanawha County. He knew his grandparents and his cousins of his uncle John who lived near the Millers on Indian Creek. Joseph married Margaret Brown about 1826. A daughter of James and Lucy Ferrell-Brown. They lived on Big Coal River. Joseph died October 31, 1877. (Margaret, died December 20, 1888 at age 86).

a. William, born about 1828, died 1887. Enlisted in the 7th Cavalry, Co. H, October 1, 1861 at Charleston. Discharged September 8, 1862. Five foot, ten inches, black eyes and hair. Married to Elizabeth (?) and had two children. Married Hulda Keffer November 2, 1863. Married Catherine Hancock-Turner, May 30, 1885. She was the widow of Benjamin Turner.

   a-1 Amos, born June 18, 1853.
   a-2 Letitia Ann, born 1855.
   a-3 John, born 1864.
   a-4 Somers.
   a-5 Wilson.
   a-6 Laura Lydia,
   a-7 Ruhuma, born June 22, 1874.
   a-8 Jessie, born December 28, 1876.
   a-9 Lucy, born December 1878.
   a-10 Jacob, born August 15, 1880, St Albans.
   a-11 Joseph, born February 1884, died March 7, 1884.

b. Eliza, born about 1833, married Morris Ferrell.

c. Lucy, born about 1834, married W. R. Darby, January 3, 1856.

   c-1 Stephen, born 1857.
   c-2 William Summers, born 1859.
   c-3 Elizabeth, born 1861.
   c-4 Joseph, born 1862.
   c-5 Hoyt C., born 1865.
   c-6 Sally M., born 1868.


   d-1 Clement, born November 9, 1859, at Peytona.
   d-2 Walter Preston, born 1861. Married Elizabeth Lewis, 9-17-1893.

      2-1 Norvel, born 6-30-1894.
      2-2 Deely.
      2-3 Rosie.

   d-3 Tabitha born 1863, died 1865.
d-4 Henry Andrew, born April 24, 1866, died September 15, 1943. Married Sarah Ellen Kidd, April 21, 1888.


5-1 Daniel Lee, born 1887
5-2 Lee C., born 1889.
5-3 Annie Ethyl, born 7-28-1891.
5-4 Ocea A., born 12-1893.
5-5 Juda V., born 1899.
5-6 Ezra F., born 1902.
5-7 Alpha, born (?)

d-6 Mandeville, born October 17, 1869. married Mary Maglene Crouch May 13, 1888.

6-1 Samuel Obediah, born 12-31-1889.
6-2 James S., born 6-25-1891, died 1-16-1965. Married Lydia Escue 11-12-1919.
6-3 Lena Allean, born 4-13-1896, died 9-1979.
6-6 Henry F., born 3-25-1908, died 5-2-1961.

d-7 Hezekiah, born February 23, 1870, died December 17, 1941. Married Mary Catherine Calvert February 26, 1895.

7-1 Thomas C., born 11-24-1896, died 1-12-1940.
7-2 Grace A., born 11-20-1897, died 8-6-1901.

d-8 Albert, born September 27, 1872, died February 8, 1962. Married Kitty Trowbridge September 27, 1897.

8-1 Lillian Belle, born 9-23-1898.
8-2 Albert Michael, born 4-2-1901.
8-3 Byron, born 4-29-1903.
8-4 Pearl Ruth, born 2-17-1905.
8-5 Kitty P., born 5-21-1908.
8-6 Oliver Wendell Holmes, born 9-15-1911.
8-7 Fred Edison, born 5-3-1913.
8-8 Letus Tennyson, born 9-5-1915.
8-9 Eva Mildred, born 2-8-1918.
8-10 Nellie May, born 7-6-1920.
8-11 Agnes Marguerite, born 7-14-1922.
8-12 Minnie Louise, born 12-14-1923, died 9-3-1926.


Seven children:
9-1 Frank, born about 1903.
9-2 Blanche, born about 1906.
9-3 Pansy, born about 1908.
9-4 Paul, born about 1910.
9-5 William D., born about 1913.
9-6 Calvert, born about 1916.
9-7 Lovell. born 4-22-1920.

d-10 Amos, born January 24, 1877.

d-11 Lula, born 1878, died 1-4-1880.

d-12 John Booker, born 12-20-1879, died 11-4-1959. Married Mary? Also married M. Cummings April 4, 1953.

12-1 Mabel.
12-2 Carmell.
12-3 Gertrude.
12-4 Romie.
12-5 Garella.

e. Pembroke, born 1838, died of typhoid fever during the civil war. He was considered a giant because he was seven foot tall. Some say he served in the Union army. Pembroke enlisted in Co. I, 22nd Virginia Infantry, at Charleston, June 22, 1861. Present on roll of August 31, 1861. (The 22nd Virginia Infantry by Terry Lowrey) Buried in Greenbrier County, near Alderson.


g. Jane, born 1843, married George Green, July 15, 1860.

h. James, born June 1850, died September 5, 1905. Married Fairlena Keffer April 16, 1875.

h-1 John, born 2-1-1876.
h-2 Matthew Joseph, born 8-4-1877.
h-3 Surilda Jane, born May 2, 1879.
h-4 Daniel, born 12-6-1880, died 4-30-1882.
h-5 Emily, born 11-20-1882.
h-6 Annie G., born 11-1884.
h-7 Ella Mae, born 1-1886.
h-8 Viola Memphis, born 12-12-1888.
h-9 Charles Ezra, born 11-22-1890.
h-10 Willie Clarence, born 4-20-1895.

Benjamin, son of Amos and Nancy was born about 1808 on Quaking Asp Run at at Indian Creek. Abraham Lincoln was born about one year later. Jefferson Davis was also born in 1808.

Benjamin was a boy of about six when the family left Monroe County. Eventually, he married Barbara Miller about 1833. She was the daughter of Daniel and Elizabeth Comer-Miller from Monroe County. Barbara was born about 1812 and died April 10, 1886, Boone County. Benjamin died January 13, 1897 at age eighty nine. They are buried in the Adkins-Halstead cemetery at Rock Creek. Parents of nine.

a. Marinda, was born 1835, married John Roberts and moved to Kentucky.


   c-1 Thomas, born 1870.
   c-2 James Floyd, born April 5, 1873, died February 19, 1900.
   c-3 Marshall Lee, born January 5, 1875.
   c-4 Lucinda, born 1877.
   c-5 Mary Etta, born January 1879.
   c-6 Lloyd, born June 9, 1881.
   c-7 Osie, born October 20, 1882.
   c-8 Russell, born June 30, 1883.
   c-9 Johnny, born March 14, 1885, died 1934.
   c-10 Annie, born March 26, 1886, died August 15, 1888.
   c-11 Becky, born October 20, 1887.
   c-12 Babe A., born February 12, 1889.
   c-13 Marion, born January 28, 1892.
   c-14 Fannie, born November 29, 1894, died 1963.
   c-15 Priscilla, born 189?

d. Leatha, born 1840, married Michael Easter, October 26, 1877.


g. Salina, born 1847, died 1926. Never married.


i. Nancy, born February 1851, married Elijah Williams, March 6, 1878. Born 1851, died 1938.
IV Elizabeth was born 1809 at the old homeplace in Monroe County, now located at Indian Mills at the Bluestone Reservoir camping grounds. Thomas Jefferson was President when she was born.

She was about five years old when her family relocated to Kanawha County. She eventually married Isaac Miller, March 19, 1821. Isaac was the son of John Miller, Sr., and Sarah Carter. Elizabeth died about 1855. They had no children. Elizabeth’s widowed mother Nancy lived with her for a while after Amos died.

V Ruth was born about 1810 and died about 1888, in Boone County. She married James Hewit Workman about 1834 or 1835. James was born 1785, died about 1859. Parents of six children.

a. Abraham, born 1836, married Martha Workman.
b. Elizabeth, born 1838.
c. William, born 1840, married Julie Pauley.
d. Pauline, born 1842, married James White.
e. Letha, born 1848, married William Collins.
f. Arsena, born 1847, married James George, also Abner Turley.


a. Nancy, born February 11, 1830.
b. Dryden, born February 16, 1832.
c. Tolbert, born September 1, 1834.
d. Nash, born March 6, 1838.
e. Anderson, born April 8, 1840.
f. Obadiah, born November 15, 1843, died June 12, 1881.
g. William C., born September 12, 1846.
h. Blackburn, born February 4, 1849.
i. John born June 13, 1854.
j. Polly Ann, born August 21, 1858.

This concludes the family of Amos and Nancy Halstead.
CHILDREN OF BASSELL AND SARAH PERDUE HALSTEAD. RUSS AND WIFE, BESSIE (IN BACK) EMMA, FANNIE, LLOYD AND BEN HALSTEAD.
CHAPTER SEVEN
BENJAMIN, SON OF JAMES

I - ALEXANDER, Son of Benjamin
WILLIAM, Son of Alexander
CHARLES, Son of William
(My family line)

(Chapter Eight Continue's with II - MORDICAI of Benjamin)
The marriage bond issued to Benjamin and Patience Roles for marriage, February 28, 1803. A marriage bond was required for all marriages from the Governor, who was John Page at the time. The bond was in the amount of one hundred fifty dollars, which was usually sworn to by a friend or member of the family and in this case the bondsman was Charles Meeks. Charles Meeks was married to Benjamin's sister Elizabeth.
Benjamin was the youngest son of James and a mother whose name is unknown. His mother was a number in the 1810 Monroe census, a female over age forty five. Perhaps she was called Nancy. Benjamin and each of his two brothers named a daughter Nancy. Elizabeth, presumed to have been a sister married to Charles Meeks. More than likely there were more sisters and brothers, in those times it was very unusual to have a family of only four children. Most families had from nine to fifteen children. Some of the children may have died or were killed by Indians before the family moved to Greenbrier County.

There was a battle at Yorktown and the British burned Richmond the year Benjamin was born. The Revolution was going on. George Washington became President when Benjamin was eight years old.

Benjamin was about four or five when James started to appear in Greenbrier County records. After he was grown Benjamin told census takers for two or three decades that he was born in North Carolina in 1781. There were no records found of the family in North Carolina indicating that they were there for a short time (if they were actually there). James is not listed as a tax payer in North Carolina taxes from records of 1679 to 1790.

Benjamin and his family left many records in Monroe County. More is known about him than his brothers because he was the only one who did not move westward. There are landgrants, transfers of property, deeds, church records, written permissions for his daughters to marry, marriage bonds, militia records as well as O. Morton's mention of them in his History of Monroe County and are mentioned in other people's family histories. There is no mention of a middle name for Benjamin, his father or brothers in records found as of this date. Benjamin and Patience were my third great grandparents and some family history has been handed down through the family.

Benjamin grew up on Indian Creek. His father was about forty six years old when they settled there in 1786 if he was born about 1740 as Mr. Millers tells us in his book. His mother was probably about the same age. In 1810 there was one free female slave over forty five mentioned.

When Benjamin was twenty two he married Patience Roles, age nineteen. She had come from North Carolina with her family about the same year that James came to Greenbrier. Christopher Roles was the first Roles mentioned in the 1786 Greenbrier tithables and then he disappeared from all records. The only mention of her father Henry (?) was the written permission given for her marriage in 1803. The Roles lived on Bradshaw Creek at that time. James gave written permission and the couple was married February 26, 1803. Charles Meeks was surety bondsman.

The written permissions give proof of their parents. The permissions have been in an undisturbed envelope for one hundred and eighty six years if they are still there, at the Union Court House where I found and replaced them in 1993. The permission that James wrote for Benjamin had an m n added over the ie in Benjie, as an afterthought. They were written with a feather quill which left ink blobs on the papers. John Hutchinson was County Clerk. About this time in history Lewis and Clark had started their long journey westward to map the uncharted wonders west of the Missouri River.

Prudence Roles married William Campbell Oct. 16, 1816, Monroe County. Rebecca Roles married Alexander Brison (Nancy Roles-widow signed the surety bond) May have been sisters of Patience Roles-Halstead and daughters of Nancy Roles.
The young couple started married life on his father's land until he became the owner of the farm of his brother Amos in 1813, and two years later inherited his father's farm. If his mother was living she may have lived with Benjamin. She is not mentioned after the Monroe census of 1810.

Work was hard in the early times, land had to be cleared, fences to build, livestock to care for, planting and harvesting without modern machinery. Women gardened, cooked, preserved food, wove flax and wool, made all the clothes for the family, bearing and attending to children and laundry. Work started before daylight and ended at dark or later. Most everyone lived in log cabins. Some were small, some two story. One log home near Cook's Run built from virgin timber had logs that looked to be about two feet on each of the four sides. One man could not build a house by himself, neighbors helped each other build homes, barns and helped get in their harvest before winter. Bad weather and drought caused crop failure. Bugs and pests ate their share of the crops. Most people were in debt at some time or another, many for a lifetime.

There was very little actual money and most folks bartered. At that time money was English pounds, shillings, pence etc. Some money was earned from turning in wolf or panther heads, beaver skins or from gathering ginseng or other herbs. Salt was very necessary for preserving food and meat for the winter, most being brought up from Kanawha County and was very expensive. Some salt was dug at the mouth of Quaking Asp Run. Buffalo were gone from that part of the country by the early 1800's.

Benjamin and Patience farmed and raised their children with the usual hard times of the early 1800's. Most of his children could read and write. School was during the winter months after crops had been harvested and work was slack. They were always on guard from bears, wolves, panthers and other wild animals. Bounty on wolves and panthers fluctuated from two to eight dollars a head depending on the year.

Threats from Indians didn't end until about 1795 when Benjamin was about fourteen. He and his family saw their share of Indians. The nearest forts were Lafferty's and Wood's fort on Rich Creek where they gathered when the signal was heard. Steel Lafferty was killed during an encounter. There are many recorded instances of Indian encounters with the pioneers on Indian Creek, and many that are not recorded. The Mann and Cook forts were on Indian Creek near the Mann, Miller and John Halstead families. Cooks fort held about three hundred people and they sometimes stayed there for weeks. The local militia stood guard so the farmers could plant and harvest their crops. The Farley's had a fort just across New River and many of the Farley children were born there.

Indian Creek at New River was a favored hunting ground for the Indians. There was a flint quarry and natural salt lick at Quaking Asp and Indian, which was familiar to the Shawnee. Captain Audley Paul and his men had a confrontation with six or seven Indians there on an island a few years before Benjamin's time and most were killed right in the area of our first ancestors. The name of Quaking Asp Run was changed at some time in the early 1800's to Stinking Lick Creek and is still called the same.
The early pioneer's sons and daughters would marry into the neighboring families. Many times two sisters would marry two brothers from the same family. They met at Church socials and other gatherings.

Benjamin, his brothers and sister Elizabeth could read and write. There was a school and church on land donated by Benjamin. The school was on the banks of Indian Creek, the church was located at the east end of the old iron bridge across Indian a few yards from Benjamin's place. It was probably on the land Benjamin inherited from his father James whose place was the one located on Indian Creek. The adjoining Halstead farms ran along Quaking Asp toward Ballard. Benjamin's mill would have been on his dad's place on Indian as there is not enough water on Quaking Asp for a mill, it is a very small creek. Perhaps the school and church were built about 1813 on James land because that was the year that James had to pay a very large tax (for those times) which was for covered buildings.

On August 16, 1813, Benjamin acquired the ninety six acre farm from his brother Amos for one dollar, when Amos moved to Kanawha County. This was the land surveyed by James in 1791 whenever James bought his place from Sawyers and the two farms adjoined. When James died in 1815, Benjamin became the owner of his fathers farm of seventy four acres. Benjamin bought thirty four acres from James Ellison, June 14, 1815. He received a patent for one hundred and sixty acres, October 1, 1822, another patent (or grant) for one hundred ten acres August 5, 1833, the last patent of three acres September 30, 1847. All west of Red Sulphur Springs. When Benjamin died about 1856 he was living on the three acres which joined the property now owned by James Keatley and William Adair. Benjamin had earlier been granted a thousand acre land patent. Some of his land joined that of Rebecca Cantley, some joined Alexander Clark and Thomas Scott. There were about five hundred people listed in the first tax of Monroe County in 1799. Other counties would be formed from Monroe and eventually the Halstead farms would be in Monroe and Summers County.

A marriage by banns required no permission from the parents. Many names were lost by this procedure which required only that the forthcoming marriage be announced or published in a public place for two or three weeks prior to the wedding, usually a church. Some names were known from the Minister's returns. John Alderson, Jacob Cook of Cook's fort and John Wiseman were the Ministers at that time.

Mordicai Roles and Benjamin were friends and neighbors and appeared to be about the same age. They were in the local 108th militia the same years and Mordicai was probably a brother to Patience Roles-Halstead. I think Prudence Roles was her sister. A friend in Virginia is researching the Roles family history and may have more information soon. The name Mordicai has been handed down through both Roles and Halstead families, Benjamin named his first son Mordicai. The acquaintance between these two families has lasted from the 1700's to the present time, although the present generations are unaware of the first three generations even knowing one another. The old house of Mordicai's pictured on another page was less than half a mile from where Benjamin lived.

Joshua Roles of that family and Benjamin's son Alexander married the Clark sisters who were the daughters of their neighbor Alexander Clark.
Joshua and Alexander left Monroe at the same time and came to Raleigh County settling near each other, Joshua at Fireco and Alexander at Whitby. Their son and daughter would someday marry.

Our ancestors suffered many hardships and life was anything but easy. Many of their children would die of childhood diseases. Many women died in childbirth or after having six or seven children, one each year. Widowed husbands were left with young families and had to find another wife to help him raise the children and then added more children to the family. Children worked hard and there were jobs for each one and perhaps sibling rivalry about who had the most jobs. As soon as Benjamin’s sons were old enough to own a horse they married or just left home. Each one perhaps earned their horse from work at home or elsewhere. Only two sons stayed near their parents for any length of time. Alexander, the oldest had an adjoining farm of four hundred, eighteen acres and Lorenzo the youngest stayed with his mother after Benjamin died until he enlisted in the Confederate army in 1861.

In reading old property tax records (microfilmed) each year, one can almost see the families forming by sons coming of age and having a horse and girls names appearing on the marriage bonds. Then there were the land acquisitions of sons from the oldest to the youngest. James was the first landowner and then there was the survey of land that he gave to his oldest son John. John gave it to Amos and Amos gave it to Benjamin. James and Benjamin raised horses, the year their sons married they were one horse less and the son would appear as a taxpayer of one horse. Sometimes they left and appeared in other county records and some went so far away that no further records could be found for them or perhaps they died. A few went west and returned after a few years.

Benjamin farmed and was a Minister although there are no records of religious ceremonies performed by him. O. Morton wrote that the Red Sulphur Church was organized May 1815 at the home of Benjamin Halstead and was first called the Union Baptist Church. The first house of worship stood at the east end of the iron bridge over Indian Creek. There was a stone chimney in the middle with a fireplace on each side. The name was changed in 1845. The present church is a handsome structure near Ballard. About 1848 another Baptist church was built on land of Samuel Phillips. Reverend Powhatan Baber lived on Stinking Lick Creek and was a Primitive Baptist preacher, married to Caroline Tuggle in 1848.

The children and grandchildren of James were Primitive Baptists. James was probably a Baptist, maybe a preacher. An old Primitive Baptist church established in 1789 still stands on Mann property on Indian Creek, near the historical marker at Cook’s fort. Josiah Meadows organized the Bluestone Primitive Baptist Church which still stands. Josiah and his wife Juda Lilly were my fifth great grandparents, through Cordia Lilly-Halstead.

An old church program of September 4, 1830, shows the minutes of a Baptist Association held at Mann’s meeting house and gives a list of thirteen churches in the Strawberry Association at that time. The introductory sermon was delivered by Elder James Ellison. Elder Johnson Keaton was Moderator and Matthew Ellison the Clerk. Two of the Messengers listed from the Union Baptist Church were Benjamin Halstead and Joseph Ellison. Other familiar names mentioned were John and Joseph Alderson, James Ellis,

The local 108th militia was called out to put down the Whiskey Insurrection and some went to Norfolk in 1812 for the defense of Norfolk, some just suffered from illness.

Major General Daniel Morgan was the Commander of four Divisions in 1794, the 108th of Greenbrier-Monroe, the 107th of Randolph County, the 77th of Hampshire County, and the 18th Brigade of Joseph Neville. The 11th and 107th were in Harrison and Randolph counties. General Morgan had two thousand five hundred men in the vicinity of Pittsburg the winter of 1794-1795.

The 108th was commanded by Major Samuel Clark in 1809, Richard Shanklin and Conrad Peters in 1811. The 79th Greenbrier was commanded by Major James Matthews. Some familiar names mentioned on a list of missed meetings for the 108th in the year of 1814 were Solomon and Daniel Broyles, Joseph Giles, Miles Burdit, Hugh Cummings, Andrew Calloway, William Clark, Joshua Calloway, Francis Ellison, James and Gideon Farley, Amos Kilburn, William Maddy, Mordicai Roles, Thomas Scott, James Sciers and Thomas Wylie. Four years later, on a list for 1818 were names of John Alderson, Robert and Thomas Boyd, Henry Ballengee, Caleb Bowles, Joel Ramsey, Bailey Wood, Andrew Walker, Matthew Ellison, Abner Greenlee, Benjamin Halstead and others.

Planting and harvesting kept men from attending meetings as well as other reasons. A fine was twenty five cents a meeting. O. Morton wrote that John Halstead was called out for duty in 1805 and could not make the muster. Jacob Mann took his place and in turn Andrew Miller took Jacob Mann's place.

Benjamin's death spared him the grief of the civil war years and the loss of his son Mordicai who was killed in the battle at Lewisburg and the deaths, sickness, hardships of his grandchildren and nephews. He saw most of his children get married to the neighboring families and had the pleasure of knowing the first grandchildren. There are no records to show that Benjamin ever had but one wife who was Patience Roles, mother of all his children.

At the age of fifty three Benjamin and his family fell into hard times along with about twenty other farmers and lost all their property for unknown reasons. Alexander lost his property as well and he moved to Raleigh County. Benjamin then took a grant of three acres and continued to live in the same area until he died a few years later, 1856. He was seventy five. Patience and Lorenzo were living in the same household and counted in the Monroe census of 1860. Lorenzo is mentioned in the Civil War records and after that time neither he or his mother were found again in West Virginia records.

James Keatley purchased the Halstead farms from the Adairs and bequeathed them to his sons. He died a few years later. The Adair's owned a large mercantile establishment at Red Sulphur Springs. (Monroe Book 1, page 323, L 82 Book 2, page 26, L 220, Order 236).
Wilson, son of James Keadey became the recipient of the seventy four acre farm first owned by James and then Benjamin. Wilson and his wife Martha and their young son were buried in the old James Halstead family cemetery, later on moved to the new cemetery on a hill by the Corps of Engineers.

The Halstead family cemetery called Nr. 20 by the Corps of Engineers had eleven unknown Halstead graves. All were moved and relocated to the cemetery on the hill at Indian Mills, about one mile from the original cemetery. Each grave had a wooden casket. There were no gravestones for any, perhaps there were uncarved fieldstones at one time. There is now a gravestone for Benjamin and Patience beside the one for James placed where we thought they may have been buried, marked by the Corps of Engineers.

The following history about Benjamin's children is fragmentary, exact birthdates are unknown for many. Ages are estimated for some by their first appearance in the tax records and assuming that they were about twenty or so. Girls ages were estimated to be about nineteen or twenty when they appeared in marriage records. Some ages are correct that were later found in the death records.

Many present day descendents were found through many letters of inquiry sent out randomly through the years to names and addresses found in telephone directories. I found many little stories of interest plus many pictures of the old folks. Unfortunately, most pictures are unprintable because they were too dark or were zeroxed copies or too faded.

Benjamin's descendents are in as much order as can be estimated and some are quite lengthy and brought up to the present time. The family history of Alexander and Emily Keadey is long because more is known of their family. They were my great, great grandparents.

It has been fun meeting our distant cousins, especially Clint Halstead who shared so much of his research and gave me many dates that I could not have found by living here in Georgia.

The children of Benjamin and Patience were Alexander, Mordicai, Virginia Elizabeth, Benjamin Jr., Aseneth, Chloe, Amos, Emily, Nancy, Lorenzo and perhaps one called Elsie. (Charles, son of William was married to Cordia Ann Lilly and were my grandparents and their daughter Mildred is my mother.)

![Gravestone of Benjamin and Patience Roles](image)

*The cemetery about one mile on the left before getting to Indian Mills camping grounds.*
Alexander Hamilton was the first son born to Benjamin and Patience, November 11, 1805. Named for Alexander Hamilton, soldier of the Revolution who was killed in a duel by Aaron Burr a year before Alexander was born. (Aaron Burr owned property in Greenbrier County after the war) Thomas Jefferson was President that year and Alexander lived through the terms of sixteen Presidents, including Lincoln. Grant was President the year he died, March 20, 1870.

Alexander knew his uncles John and Amos and cousins before they moved westward. He was ten years old when his grandfather James died and knew his grandmother wherever she was. He and his brothers and sisters went to the school located on his father's farm. Being the oldest he helped with farming and other chores. Most of his brothers and sisters left home when they married while he lived close to his parents for many years.

At age twenty three Alexander married Selenah Clark, December 8, 1828, the daughter of their neighbor Alexander and his wife Mary Hawkins-Clark. Alexander and Selenah probably grew up together, perhaps attending the same school. Selenah disappeared from all records in Monroe County after the 1830 census and presumed to have died early in the marriage, perhaps in childbirth. There were no children born to them. No one knows when she died or where she was buried. She may have been one of the eleven unknown Halstead graves in the old Halstead cemetery at Indian Mills.

Selenah was about four generations down from John Clark and Ann Rogers of Albemarle County, Virginia. John and Ann's two famous sons were George Rogers Clark and William Clark (of the Lewis and Clark expedition). John had a brother James, who lived with his wife Elizabeth in Augusta County about twenty miles away from John.

The son of James; Alexander Clark I and his wife Sarah Lafferty (Laverty) were parents of Alexander II, who lived with his wife Mary Hawkins on Indian Creek. Selenah, the daughter of Alexander II and Mary married Alexander Halstead. Her sister Hannah married Joshua Roles. Her brother Samuel married Virginia Elizabeth Halstead, Alexander's sister.

A land patent was issued to Alexander for four hundred eighteen acres, March 12, 1833. The property joined that of Benjamin and ran along Quaking Asp Creek toward Ballard. He lived there until around 1847 and appeared to be single for many years. He built a house, barn, fences, planted fruit orchards and cleared his land. He had horses, cattle, sheep, pigs and other animals. At this time he and Benjamin owned nine hundred acres.

Alexander married Emily Keatley, July 6, 1838. Emily was the daughter of Jesse James Keatley and Lydia Sovain-Keatley, granddaughter of Abraham and Lydia Sovain. Alexander was about thirty two and Emily about eighteen at the time of their marriage. Her parents lived on the neighboring farm. Emily was born about 1819.

Emily's grandfather Francis Keatley, Sr., and his brother Christopher came from Donegal, Ireland. Francis was in Moffett's Company who fought with General Green's army in the Carolina's during the American Revolution. Francis and his wife Elizabeth lived at and owned three hundred acres on Brush Creek, Monroe County. Also paid tax in Greenbrier County from 1783 to 1786, perhaps more. Their children were James, Thomas, William, Ann, Caty, Hannah (married to Jonathan Roach of the 12th Virginia), Elizabeth and Polly. Francis Keatley had a will dated January 1825. James Keatley is believed to have died August 17, 1846 at Indian Creek. Lydia died May 10, 1869, in Mercer County at age seventy four.
Emily's maternal grandfather was Abraham Sovain, born about 1741, at Winchester, Virginia and came to Greenbrier about 1780. He was sheriff and jailor in the Sweet Springs district. Abraham died in 1803. He and Lydia had one son Henry and seven daughters.

The children of Alexander and Emily who were born in Monroe County were Henry, Selina, James and Green.

A deed of trust was executed August 25, 1842 by William Adair, Jr., for four hundred seventy dollars against Benjamin and Alexander. All their property was sold. James Keatley bought the Halstead farms from the Adair's. James Keatley's will dated November 24, 1845, reads "item 6, I give my son Henry all that tract where Alexander Halstead now lives, containing fifty eight acres, also that part of the tower hill that was fenced and improved by Alexander Halstead, including the peach orchard on the road to said forty acres".

Alexander and Emily were living in Raleigh County by 1848, perhaps sooner. His friend Joshua Roles settled at Fiereco and Alexander settled at Bowyer and Piney Creeks about five miles or so apart. They may have helped one another build their houses and barns.

Alexander's first house was on Bowyer Creek on Cal Lilly mountain, on uncleared land with no others in sight. He started over again clearing land, building fences, roads and planting orchards. Their first home was a two story log house in a remote area on Bowyer Creek. Four generations later the house was still standing but deserted and finally torn down in the 1940's. Alexander was not destitute when he came to Raleigh County. He was paying tax on eighteen hundred acres by 1850 and bought more land after that time. Back in Monroe his dad Benjamin and mother were counted in the census of 1850, living in the same household with his son Lorenzo and daughter Nancy Toler and her husband Caleb and their four children.

Their first baby born in Raleigh County was Christopher, born April 1848. The county seat would be Beckley in two years, 1850.

Some of the land Alexander bought was; six hundred acres from Isaac Prince about 1859, located on Piney Creek, one hundred ninety five acres plus another thirty three from General Alfred Beckley in 1861, all located at Whitby about two miles down from the mountain where the Bowyer farm was located. He owned one acre at Flat Top that he acquired from Vince Phillips earlier in 1850, one acre on Glade Creek located fifteen miles from the Beckley court house and paid tax on it until 1858.

The Bowyer farm was handed down through three generations. The last to live there was Alexander's grandson Charles, (of William) who raised his family of fourteen and stayed on to care for his aging parents William and Jane until they died.
The old Alexander house was still standing when I was young and we played in it until it was torn down. Mother was born there along with her older brothers and sisters, the children of Charles, of William. Her younger brothers and sisters would be born later in the house vacated by her grandparents William and Nancy after their death. Mother told me that the kitchen to the old house was originally built away from the house and had a covered archway. I remember the fireplace and a closet built under the stairs. Nearby was a springhouse that had clear, cold mountain water running through on a flat slate rock floor which was in use for about one hundred years. Milk and butter were kept cool even in summer. Four generations from Alexander waded and played in Bowyer Creek and roamed in the woods. My young aunts, one uncle and cousins and I played and grew up together at the Bowyer Hollow farm. There was an apple tree in the yard of the old house that grew huge apples they called the Alexanders. There were others they called Permains, my favorite was an orchard of Sweet apples that were probably planted by Alexander. There was a peach orchard, a black cherry tree, concord and wild grapes, chestnuts, hickory nuts, blackberries, huckleberries and strawberries. It was a beautiful place and I looked forward to our visits every Sunday and summer vacation.

The other children born at the Bowyer farm after Christopher were William, Lydia, Emily and Celia. Alexander reported the birth of a baby girl born in his household in 1850. No records could be found of a child belonging to them named Mary. She may have died shortly after birth.

Sometime around 1861 Alexander moved his family to Whitby and built a two story log house on Piney Creek. That year the war between the states began and their son Henry was the first to enlist, followed by James who died in a POW camp at Point Lookout, Maryland. A few years later Green enlisted in Sweeney's Company and one mention of Christopher being in Sweeney's Company which was probably just for a few weeks just before the war ended in 1865. All their cousins and uncles had also enlisted in the Confederate Army.

William was a young boy of twelve when the war started and he stayed home to help with the farming. Few people in West Virginia had slaves and their fight was for states rights. Not one person voted for Lincoln in Greenbrier County. West Virginia became a separate state in 1863.

After the war was over Green and Christopher went to Kanawha County to live and work. Henry was married and stayed in Raleigh County. Their oldest sister Selina died in a few years and her husband remarried and took his family to Missouri to live. Government markers were ordered for all four sons, one was issued for Henry, perhaps because he was in for the entire time of the war.

The house Alexander built at Whitby stood where the old Whitby post office and Company store would be built years later when the coal company move in. No one could tell me where Whitby got its name. There is a place in England called Whitby. The first post office built there was called Stahl around 1919, on Bowyer Creek. The railroad station was named Whitby. Jonben was one and a half miles south. W. D. Laidley was the first postmaster in 1918.
Alexander died March 20, 1870, of dyspepsia. Heart problems took many lives of the Halstead men down through the generations. He was buried in the family cemetery in sight of their house at that time, now located in a wooded area and in poor condition and hard to find. One acre was set aside for the cemetery, never to be sold or disturbed. The stripminers have rearranged the land and have piled mounds of dirt all around and one can barely get around the dirt to walk to it. There is a stone for Alexander and a few other unknown graves are there including a stone for a Tolley girl.

There is a stone for Benjamin beside Alexander. Benjamin died where he lived at Indian Mills in 1856. The information on the stone is incorrect which reads that he was born in New York City in 1769. He told the census takers for years that he was born in North Carolina in the year of 1781. The stone reads that he had fifteen children, only eleven could be found, unless some had died. The stone was placed there about one hundred years after he died, before people started traveling down the information highway and having access to many records that perhaps were not available at the time. There are also gravestones for Alexander and Benjamin in the cemetery in Fayette county where Benjamin’s son Mordicai is buried.

After Alexander died and her children were grown Emily sold out and moved to Ronceverte. Her son William stayed on becoming owner of the Bowyer farm and some of the Whitby land. He married and built a house for his new bride Nancy which was near the old house and it faced the old cemetery. They raised their children there. In their later years they moved back to the Bowyer farm and built a new modern house just in sight of the old Alexander home and lived there until they died. He had told his grandchildren that he had always loved the old Bowyer farm.

It was a long way to Kanawha County in those days and one wonders if Green and Christopher saw their parents again after they left. Some in the family think that Green did return to visit his brother William in their later years. Their names were mentioned in the family.

Before Alexander died he and Emily had sold seventy five acres to John H. Aliff, February 10, 1870 which was located on the waters of Piney Creek at the mouth of the branch near the Anderson Lilly place, to the corner of David Thompson’s and down to Piney Creek.

Emily and her son Henry sold three hundred acres to C. E. Tolley, June 11, 1874. (A survey originally made for Henry Banks) Henry sold three hundred acres to his brother William in 1874. Emily sold one hundred thirty seven acres to H. E. Fink in 1889, forty acres to Azel Ford, 1889 and seventy five acres to Logan Bullitt located on Piney Creek in 1891, later occupied by the coal company. The Piney Creek land was at Whitby.

Logan M. Bullitt and Azel Ford were the first to option up valuable coal lands in Raleigh County in the 1890’s. Plans for Raleigh County commenced when Philadelphia capitalists Drexel and others sent their emissaries into Raleigh County to assemble the coal and timber lands which was done a few years before the C & O commenced to extend its branch lines into Raleigh County, the first of which was the Piney Branch, built in 1901, making possible the opening and development of the large mining properties in the county. Every valley and hollow had railroads, mining towns and camp housing for thousands of people. (From the Beckley Post Herald Centennial Edition, August 26, 1950, on microfilm).
Emily was a good wife and mother who worked hard and suffered the hardships of early times, raising her family, seeing her sons off to war and losing one and raising her daughters after Alexander died. The picture of Emily as a young girl was given by the Pauley family. Her hair being pulled back in a very tight bun was proper for the times and the assumption was if a girl's hair was high and fluffy she was thought to be a strumpet.

Emily lived her last years with her daughter Emily at Ronceverte (Irish Corner). The house they lived in is still there, owned by the family. The Pauley cemetery is nearby where both Emily's are buried. The cemetery is well kept and both have headstones. Emily died January 1900, and willed everything in her room to her baby granddaughter Mary Ann Pauley who was two years old.

Researching with our Keatley cousins has been a pleasure. Cathy Keatley-Garvey of California who descends from Emily's brother Henry sent a picture of Emily's parents, James and Lydia Sovain-Keatley. Cathy and Marjorie Keatley of Huntington were of great assistance in gathering family history. I am the fifth generation from Alexander and Emily, the sixth generation from James and Lydia Sovain-Keatley—my sixth great grandparents. Their descendents may number in the thousands if all could be found.

There are no pictures of Alexander. The following history of the children of Alexander and Emily is brought up to the present time in some families, more is known of their son William's family and is quite lengthy and is my family line of descent.

James Keatley and Lydia Sovain (From Cathy Keatley-Garvey, CA)

Parents of Emily Keatley-Halstead

Great, great, great grandparents of the writer
Marriage Bond issued for Alexander's marriage to Selena Clark, Her father's written permission

KNOW all men by these presents, that we, Alexander Walton

are held and firmly bound unto Governor of Virginia and his successors,

for the use of the Commonwealth, in the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, to which payment well and truly to be made, we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seals and dated this 8th day of December, A. D. 1828.

The condition of the above obligation is such, that whereas a marriage is shortly intended to be solemnized between the above bound Alexander Walton and Selena Clark of Monroe county, if therefore, there shall be no lawful cause to obstruct the said marriage, then the above obligation to be void, otherwise to remain in full force and virtue.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of

[Signature]

Alexander Walton

December the 5th 1828

Mary Jane Hutchinson, sir, please to issue

A set of Licences for Selena Clark and Alexander Walton to solemnize your marriage. I will oblige you more forth.

[Signature]

Samuel Clark

Ink blobs made from a feather quill pen
Marriage Bond for Alexander and Emily Keatley with her father's permission.

Know all men by these Presents, that we Alexander Baltieod and John Halsedd are held and firmly bound unto Accord Campbell Governor of Virginia and his successors, for the use of the Commonwealth, in the sum of One Hundred and Fifty Dollars, to which payment well and truly to be made, we bind ourselves, our heirs executors and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seals, and dated this 6th day of July, 1837.

The Condition of the above Obligation is such, That whereas a Marriage is shortly intended to be solemnized between the above bound Alexander Halsedd and Emily Keatley of County, if therefore, there shall be no lawful cause to obstruct the said Marriage, then the above Obligation to be void, else to remain in full force and virtue.

Signed, sealed, and delivered,

in the presence of 

[Signatures]

John Keatley

John Keatley was Emily's brother.
Henry was the first child of Alexander and Emily, born at their first home on Quaking Asp Run (aka Stinking Lick Creek) near Indian Creek. He was born August 17, 1838 and was about eleven when the family moved to Raleigh county. Martin Van Buren was President at the time and he lived through the terms of twenty Presidents including Lincoln, Grant, Theodore Roosevelt and others. Henry knew his grandparents and was eighteen when grandpa Benjamin died.

Henry worked as a carpenter for Richard McVey and married his daughter Elizabeth March 28, 1860, by General Alfred Beckley. Elizabeth was born July 17, 1838. Her mother was Lucinda Cooper-McVey. Her father was a young engineer, surveyor and contractor and he laid out the map of Beckley for General Alfred Beckley.

Richard McVey settled along Piney Creek where the C & O had McVey station. He was a Confederate soldier and POW who was released and died on the way home from the war. Richards father was the son of James McVey and grandson of Eli McVey, a soldier in Washington's army during the Revolution. "Elizabeth's sister Annie was a school teacher who married Aden Thompson at age forty." Thompson was elected to the State Legislature.

When the civil war started Henry left his young wife and baby William Henry and enlisted in the Confederate army.

The war records show that Private-Corporal Henry Halstead enlisted first in Giles county, May 1861 in Christopher Roles-his brother in law's Company C, 36th Virginia Regiment. Rejoined May7, 1862 at Camp Success, Pearisburg under Captain Linkous for the duration of the war. He was in the 36th until confined in a military prison at Wheeling known as Bethaenum, by the 12th Ohio Infantry in Raleigh County, January 8, 1864. He was sent to POW Camp Chase, Ohio, March 1864-received at Wheeling March 8, 1864 then transferred to to Fort Delaware March 17, 1864. He was sick at Chimboraux hospital August 31, 1864. Was exchanged September 28, 1864. Transferred October 15, 1864 and escaped. Captured at Waynesboro March 2, 1865 and POW at Fort Delaware March 1865. He took the oath of amnesty June 2, 1865 and was released. War records describe him as six foot, blue eyes, dark hair and complexion, age twenty six. During the war he had measles and other illnesses. He suffered from hunger and freezing temperatures.

His dad Alexander died five years after the war ended, his mother was widowed and left with three young girls to raise. His father left him three hundred acres at Whitby which he sold to his brother William in 1874.

Elizabeth died young at the age of thirty seven of tuberculosis, August 22, 1876. She was buried at the McVey cemetery at Sullivan. Henry was now in a difficult situation with a family of small children from age two to twelve. He had to work so he had to make arrangements for the children to be split up and placed with family and friends.

Henry was a carpenter and he built many houses in Raleigh county. After five years he married again to Roxalana Snuffer, January 10, 1881 by Rev. Mathew Ellison. Roxalana was the daughter of Cyrus and Mary Snuffer and born November 7, 1859. The Snuffer's lived at Snuffer's Branch near Glen Daniel and Stevens Lake. (An old and interesting article on microfilm tells about Theodorich Snuffer who was related to the Younger family and he gave refuge to John and James Younger. John Younger was injured and died. He was buried in Snuffer's orchard.)
Henry's last home was a nice two story home that he built at Eccles. Now occupied by the Gwinn family.

Photographs handed down in the family shows Henry's family at a reunion held in late summer or early fall of 1916. Most of his children were there as well as his sisters Emily, Lydia and Celia and his brother William of Whitby. Henry looked ill in the picture and all the others looked somber. Henry died April 5, 1917 a few months after the reunion.

Roxalana died July 9, 1932. Both are buried at the Snuffer-Clay cemetery at Lake Stevens. There is a government war marker mounted on granite which was placed at his grave in the summer of 1996 not knowing any of his descendents at that time. I have since corresponded with one of their descendents, Lacy Hedrick of Tennessee.

Henry and his two wives had thirteen children. With Elizabeth there were William Henry, Mary Jane, James, Richard, Annie, Stonewall Jackson and Alexander. With Roxalana was Johnny, Roxy, Locky, Beatrice, Frank and Daisy.

CHILDREN OF
ALEXANDER AND EMILY
KEATLEY HALSTEAD

LYDIA, EMILY AND CELIA
HENRY AND WILLIAM
LAST REUNION
(Henry died soon after)

Christopher and Green were in Kanawha Co. Selina and James had died.
a-1 William Henry was born May 19, 1861, died August 6, 1942. He married Rosa Naylor. William died at age eighty one in an old folks home at Shady Springs and was buried in the McVey cemetery at Sullivan.

a-2 Mary Jane was born June 9, 1863, died December 8, 1918. She married Arch Sutphin November 29, 1888.

a-3 James H. was born July 25, 1866, died August 20, 1944 at age seventy eight. James was a coal prospector and taught school for twenty five dollars a month and paid four of it for room and board. He worked for Fayette county engineers and coal prospecting, becoming an expert on the topography of the smokeless coal region. He was associated in the development of Robins, Laurel Creek, Greenwood and Wright coal companies. Also worked for Low Moor coal company and in Kentucky. James married Lethia Hale, December 28, 1893, daughter of M. H. Hale. They had one daughter Virginia, employed in Washington. James was a member of the Beckley Mason Lodge. He and his wife are buried in Sunset Mausoleum at Beckley. James was ten years old when his mother died and he lived with the family of George Hedrick near Odd.

3-1 Virginia, NFR.

a-4 Richard was born April 3, 1868, died 1923 in Mercer County. He married Lula Fordham. (From Jubin E. Sanjit, Captain, WVVI, Company K, "Richard Halstead, Private, Co. K, Second Regiment of Volunteers enrolled June 23, 1898 to serve two years, is hereby discharged by mustering out at age twenty nine. Born at Pemberton, WV. Five foot nine and one half, fair complexion, blue eyes, brown hair. Occupation-miner. Greenville, SC, April 10, 1899. Spanish American War. Remarks: Honest, faithful, excellent character") This was found on microfilm.

Richard lived at Matoaka, had one arm missing from an accident. He and Lou were parents of six children.

4-1 Jackaline
4-2 Ruby-Walker
4-3 Anna-Reed
4-4 Douglas
4-5 Kyle
4-6 Robert Odham

a-5 Anna Elizabeth was born June 16, 1871, died May 5, 1925. Anna married Philip Henry Hedrick August 4, 1887. Anna was raised by her aunt Rosie McVey at Sullivan. Aunt Rosie told them that the famous picture of General Lee on his horse was made in front of her house at Sullivan. Perry Hedrick was born in Greenbrier county in 1825, his son Phillip was born 1866. Annie and Phillip lived on a farm at Windmill Gap in 1899 and raised twelve children.

Lacy Hedrick's great grandfather bought two hundred acres from Adam Halstead, located on the head waters of Camp Creek and Tommys Creek on Flat Top mountain for nine hundred dollars. Perry Hedrick deeded a two
hundred acre farm at Odd to Phillip and Anna in 1890. They sold it in 1899 and bought the mountain top farm at Windmill Gap and built a large house where they raised their children.

Anna was a resourceful, hard working and devoted to her family. She insisted on her children getting a good education. She wore long dresses and her hair up in a bun. Anna was devoted to her faith and her daughter Eileen remembered long trips to counsel meetings and would sleep in or under the wagons. Phillip was killed from an accidental gunshot, October 1923. Anna died two years later from tuberculosis. Both are buried in the family cemetery on their old farm at Windmill Gap, Mercer County.

5-1 Lawrence, born October 10, 1888, died December 9, 1910 of unexplained gunshot. Unmarried.

5-2 Hickman Jarrett, born March 10, 1889, died September 8, 1925 of unexplained gunshot. Married twice. Dolly ? and Mary Spencer.

5-3 Minnie, born 1891, died 1950. Married James Armstrong. Buried at Sunset Memorial cemetery, Beckley, WV.

5-4 Brookie born 1892, married W. E. Foster.

5-5 Dora born 1895.

5-6 Dewey born August 17, 1898, died July 25, 1944. Married Franklin Shakleford. Buried in the McVey cemetery.

5-7 John C., born October 27, 1900, died September 26, 1987 of pneumonia. Married Otta Walker, born 1904, died 1988. Children of John and Otta were:

7-1 Lacy Vaughn born 1926, married Bertha Stearns.
7-2 Janette Lorine born 1927, married William E. Thompson.
7-3 Margaret Ann born 1929, married Robert E. Martin.
7-4 Phillip Henry born 1931, married Frances McCoy.
7-5 Shirley C., born 1934, married James R. Pate.
7-6 Randall C., born 1939, married Patricia Kennedy.
7-7 James R., born 1940, married Linda Joyce Hedrick.

5-8 Alex born March 1902. Married twice.


5-10 Ruth, born August 12, 1907, married a Moskovich.

(The first postmaster at Odd asked the officials what should he call the new post office? The officials said "just name it something odd").
5-11 Elizabeth, born 1908, married a Robinette.

5-12 Eileen, born December 4, 1916, married a Reid.

a-6 Stonewall Jackson, born September 22, 1872, died November 11, 1956. Married Mary Norman.

a-7 Alexander, born February 10, 1874, died December 17, 1933. Married Nora McCoy. Alexander moved to Canada, became a citizen and died there.

Children born to Henry and Roxalana Snuffer:

a-8 Johnny, born January 31, 1882, died September 13, 1883. Age one year and six months. Buried in the Snuffer-Clay cemetery at Lake Stevens.

a-9 Roxy Lana, born April 14, 1884. Married Beverly D. Lacy September 13, 1905.


10-1 Roxanne-Wood
10-2 John Marcum

a-11 Beatrice, married a Higgins.

a-12 Frank H. born March 10, 1895, died June 8, 1981. Married Dymple Wilburn April 4, 1931. Frank was a timber agent with New River Company from 1943 to 1960. He was born at Meadow Creek, New River, Summers County. Lived at Trap Hill 1981. Two children.

12-1 James Henry, born February 23, 1932, graduated from Columbia University, Georgia. Four years in the U.S. Air Force. Married to Billie J. Smith.
1-1 Kay
1-2 William Frank
1-3 Kelly

12-2 Charles William, born November 19, 1934. Graduated from Morris Harvey College, Charleston, WV.


This concludes the family of Henry Halstead.
The last reunion before Henry died. Henry’s brother and sisters, his children and others unknown.
The Last Family Reunion of Henry Halstead's Family at his Home
(Names are from Jack Patton-supplied by Roxanne Marcum and Sylvia)

Front Row: 1-Brookie Hedrick 2-Douglas Halstead 3-Virginia Halstead 4-Fern Sutphin 5-Sylvia Lacey holding 6-Roxanna Marcum 7-Roxie Halstead.

Photo made about 1915

The unknown names of Henry's family were supplied by Roxanne Marcum-Wood (Nr. 6) in 2001.
b. Selina was the first daughter born to Alexander and Emily 1-25-1840 at the farm on Indian Creek and was eight years old when her family moved to Bowyer Creek in Raleigh County. Her dad's first wife was named Selina, her mother Emily must have known her on Indian Creek.

Selina grew up and ten years later married Christopher Roles, son of Joshua and Hannah Clark-Roles of Fireco. Christopher was born on Bradshaw Creek, Monroe County, 1836. Christopher and Selina probably knew one another as children. Christopher may have been the grandson of Christopher Roles who was counted in Greenbrier County tithables in the years of 1786-1787 then disappeared from all records after that time. The next census of Monroe shows Nancy Roles a widow, who could have been the wife of Christopher. I believe they were the parents of Patience Roles who married Benjamin Halstead, also the parents of Mordicai and Joshua Roles. The Roles family had come from North Carolina and settled on Bradshaw Creek, near where James Halstead lived at the same time.

A young and spirited Christopher Roles age fourteen was among the first cases presented in the new court of Raleigh County at Beckley, April 12, 1850 and was charged with assault and battery of an unnamed person. He acknowledged that he was guilty and paid one dollar and costs.

Few people lived in the areas of Fireco and Bowyer Creek at the time and it's no surprise that Christopher and Selina would marry.

They lived at Fireco and one baby was born when the civil war began. Christopher enlisted June 3, 1861 at age twenty five, first joining Company E, then Company C, of the 36th Virginia Infantry, Confederate Army. Reenlisted in 1862, received fifty dollars and paid nineteen dollars a month for food and clothing. He was promoted to Sergeant 5-15-1862 and reduced to Private at his own request 11-1863. Christopher was captured at Piedmont, a POW at Camp Morton. Exchanged 3-4-1865, paroled 6-21-1865 at age twenty nine. Archive war records read that he was six foot, grey eyes with light hair. Christopher lost an eye during the war. Part of this information came from The 36th Infantry by J. L. Scott. Christopher had an uncle by the same name who was in the same Infantry, who was a Captain, paroled 6-13-1865. He had been elected Sheriff in 1855, was a teacher and surveyor after the war. He and his wife Frances Dew are buried in the Coal Marsh cemetery with some of their family located a few miles from Beckley.

Selina’s brothers Henry and James were in her husbands Company. Green and possibly Christopher were in Sweeney’s Company, Thurmonds Rangers. Both the Confederate and Union armies came through the area where they lived. At one time there were nine hundred Confederates encamped on Piney Creek at Beaver. Selina and others buried their valuables and food during the war.

Life continued after the war, Christopher was elected to the House of Delegates in 1872, 1874, 1878 and perhaps more. His trips to Charleston were mentioned in letters written to their son Letcher who lived out west. Selina raised geese and made goose down quilts and bedding. She owned a weaving machine.
The oldest son Letcher had gone out west to the "territory" at a young age. The family missed him and wrote often. Selina wrote him in 1883 telling him that Pa had been very sick for two weeks then her last letter tells him that she feared that she may never see him again. She died shortly after with croup and fever, December 20, 1883, at age forty three. She left a family of young children without a mother, the youngest was four years old.

Selina's grandson Chalmer Roles said she was buried in the Roles cemetery at Fireco under a pine tree. There are three or four graves under the pine tree. There are no gravestones for the Roles who are buried in the cemetery which must include Joshua and Hannah Roles. A few other people are buried there and some have gravestones. We walked to the cemetery in 1997, our guide was Benny Hutchens of Coal City who has lived there all of his life. It is in a wooded area and difficult to get to. Pauline Haga has recently found someone to clean up the cemetery at this time for donations. She has found more old cemeteries in Raleigh County than anyone and may write a book on cemeteries of Raleigh County.

When a man's wife died back then he was left with a family to raise and usually it was necessary to start looking for another to help raise his children. Raleigh County records show that Christopher Chapman Roles married Malinda Walker, 8-15-1885. She was a widow with a daughter named Josie McLaughlin. Malinda was a "Yankee" and the children did not like her.

A disturbing incident remembered by the children was that Malinda discarded their mothers clothes from her trunk and then used the trunk for her own things. The children saw little of their father when they were grown because of the stepmother.

Christopher decided to take his family west. He sold his land at Fireco to a land company who in turn sold it to a coal company. He rented two train cars and moved first to Amarillo, Texas. After living in the train cars for nearly two years and not liking Texas he moved to Sue City, Missouri because numerous people from West Virginia were living there.

There were many charming and endearing letters written in the family to Letcher, also an exchange of letters between the children throughout many years. Many were saved and kept in the family starting when Letcher went west about 1881 and through the years as they became adults. Letcher kept the letters from his parents and brothers and sisters. I was privileged to read some through the generosity of the Roles family in Arkansas. They give an interesting glimpse of history at the turn of the century over one hundred years ago.

Their letters always expressed concern for one another and first inquired about one's health and reported on their own and others in the family. One's health was most important which could end overnight and often did in those days. Interestingly, they talked of crops that were being planted each spring, their family activities, getting together and family fun. They mentioned the local happenings, politics and teased each other good naturedly. (Writing letters today has become a lost art because of telephones and computers. Our descendents may never know our thoughts, family activities and daily routines that were expressed so well in the Roles letters).
Christopher died April 1904 and Malinda died sometime later. They are buried at Sue City, Missouri. The stepdaughter Josie inherited all that Christopher had left to Malinda.

All of the children grew up out west except James who stayed in Raleigh County, WV. They were Letcher, Tompkin, Roxy, Henry, Sarah, Joshua, Lydia and James.

b-1 Letcher was born about 1860 and left home at the age of twenty one and never saw his mother again. Selina died about three years after he left West Virginia. He settled at Reding or Cash Oklahoma and bought a farm and raised mostly wheat. He was a geologist and collected rocks and was one of the first members of the Oklahoma Historical Society at Kingfisher.

He wrote and received many letters from his parents and brothers and sisters which he kept. His mother missed him, worried and begged him to come home. She once mentioned that she had four letters written to him but couldn't get them mailed and told him she was heartsick and longed to see his pretty eyes once more. His father wrote inquiring about his farm and offered money and a job if he could return home. Christopher mentioned that he couldn't write as often as the others because he couldn't see very well. (He had lost an eye during the war). They each inquired of their cousin Samuel Roles who had also gone west. Letcher wrote to Tompkin encouraging him to stay in school. Selina wrote telling him that his father was sick and confined to bed for two weeks and she became ill and died shortly after.

Their letters were addressed to Letcher at Blue Springs, Jackson County, Missouri. He never married, the date of his death and burial place is unknown.

b-2 Tompkin was born 1862. He missed his brother and wrote to him often. He kept him informed about how things were going at home and he tried to find him a job so that he would come home. Tompkin talked to Mr. Beckley about a job but couldn't get a satisfactory answer. He sent some of his school papers and often enclosed a note for his cousin Samuel Roles. Depending on his mood at the time he would sometimes say that times were bad and to stay out west. Tompkin kept him informed of the crops they were planting, corn and buckwheat one spring and the making of sugar and mentioned his dad's trips to Charleston as a Delegate. Told that his brother James had shot two wild hogs and of himself getting into a fight with a Republican at the Raleigh station and saw his old girlfriend who was so fat that he had to walk all the way around her to see the other side. One letter spoke of his dad going to have a log rolling and there was to be a quilting, dance and wished that Letcher could be there for the fun and said not one tune had been played on his fiddle since he left. He was curious about the west and wished he could go there.

Tompkin cut brush and worked to earn money for a trip out west. One day in 1903 he boarded a train at the Raleigh station for a trip to Prince, Cincinnati, St.Louis and destined for arrival at his brother Joshua's home in Missouri.
He had fifty dollars in his pocket and three hundred dollars sewn into his shirt and carried one small grip. Around Cincinnati he was robbed and thrown off train. The coroner’s report read that Tompkin was found September 12, 1903, on the shore of the Ohio river about one hundred yards below Millcreek and was thrown off or fell overboard, with no visible marks on his body. He was buried there. His brother James and cousin J. P. Roles went to Cincinnati to get him. His body was disinterred, identified and taken back to Raleigh County and was buried beside his mother under the pine tree. His coat and shoes were missing, the money was still sewn in his shirt. The cause of death was undetermined.

b-3 Roxy, the third child eloped with her cousin Samuel Roles. They moved to Kansas and were not seen again by the family.

b-4 James A. "Big Jim" was born about 1867, the only son to stay in Raleigh County when the others went west. He married Maude Meadows, a relative of Governor Meadows. Jim and Maude lived near the old Roles homeplace at Fireco on land that was handed down through the family. James wrote to his brothers after they went west but probably never saw them again. He sometimes mentioned that he would like to join them but talked later of better times when the railroad came to Whitby and Fireco.

Jim and Maude had eleven children and wrote affectionately of them in his letters calling them little daisies. Jim farmed, raised cattle and bee's and never got stung or wore protective clothing. Sometimes he sat on his porch with his feet propped up on the hives.

One in our family remembered "old Jim" back in the forty's who came to the Bowyer farm to buy or trade calves and remembered his long black curly hair and beard. Jim's daughters had wanted to bob their hair when it was fashionable in the twenties or thirties and he told them if they cut their hair he would never cut his hair again and he never did.

Jim and his neighbor had a dispute over their fences and both men had fences running side by side which was referred to as "Devil's Alley". The dispute was taken to court and Jim was granted satisfaction. Jim died in the forties. His son Chalmer said that Jim and Maude are buried in the Roles cemetery. Maude's request was that she wanted no words spoken and no songs sung after her death. Some of their children are living in West Virginia. Their birthdates are unknown and are listed in no certain order.

4-1 Sarah
4-2 James. Fayette County.
4-3 Charlie, died young.
4-4 Noah
4-5 Cindy
4-6 Myrtle
4-7 Flossie
4-8 Lydia
4-9 Daisy
4-10 Chalmer, Gatewood, Raleigh County.
4-11 Janie
Henry was born about 1869. He married Ann Brammer and she died giving birth to their son Henry Jr. Henry left the baby with his wife's parents and boarded a train at Hinton and headed west with a pistol on each hip. He never returned and his son never saw him. No one knew where he went and his brothers inquired of him in their letters. Some say that he became an outlaw but no records were found to prove or disprove.

5-1 Henry Elliott Roles was born February 12, 1907 at Odd, WV. He was raised by his grandparents. Married Geraldine Wills and they lived at Midway, Raleigh County. Henry was a retired employee of Pemberton Coal and Coke and member of the Primitive Baptist Church. He was a member of the UMWA and Mountain Lodge Nr. 156 and AM in Coal City. He and Geraldine had no children, had several nieces and nephews. Fred Wills, his nephew considered him as a dad and Henry loved him as his son. Henry went out west looking for his dad in his middle years but never found him, however he met his cousin Joshua Roles and they kept in touch through the years. Fred Wills looked after Henry in his old age and with Fred's help I found the Roles family, descendents who had gone west many years ago.

b-6 Sarah was born 1872 and married a Mr. Campbell who had been married previously. He had two sons and they had two sons.

6-1 James Noel, born 1904, died at age four.
6-2 Clay Roles Campbell, wife named Beulah.

Sarah died around 1910. Mr. Campbell remarried and died shortly after. The stepmother tried to kill Clay and his half brother came to rescue him. Clay was a farmer and died near Novelty, Missouri.

b-7 Joshua was born October 22, 1873, died December 11, 1958. He married Bessie Mae Showen at Ledda, Oklahoma on July 4, 1909. She was born September 28, 1887, died August 16, 1955. Joshua drew a land lottery claim for a farm in El Reno, Oklahoma and built a two room house to begin with. He and his friend William McVey cut and sold wood for fifty dollars a load to get started then moved to Minco, Oklahoma and farmed.

Joshua had corresponded with his brothers and sisters through the years. His brother Jim back in West Virginia wrote to him of the railroad coming to Raleigh County and of coal being shipped out and said his farm joined the old homeplace at Fireco. He mentioned that the Halsteads had to sue the coal company to get their money owed to them by the land company. He said the railroad boom had hit the county with two railroads going up Piney Creek through the old homeplace and Whitby. Land was selling from one dollar to five hundred an acre. The coal company at Fireco was Leckie Fire Creek coal and the population soon became about five hundred and eighty people.

In his letters Jim told Joshua that farming was bad and don't come back home
and teased him by asking if he had married yet or couldn’t he find an Indian that would have him. Jim inquired about Pa and asked if he was well. Letcher wrote to Joshua about drilling for oil on his land in 1922.

Joshua and Bessie are buried at Minco, Oklahoma. Their children were, Gail, Noel, Uzila Fern, Violet Marie, Joshua Harvey, and John Showen Roles.


1-1 Leslie, born 8-10-7 Married Vincent Hennigan.
1-2 Aaron C., born 3-4-1959, married Debra Sue Ford.


2-1 Terry Mark, born 10-31-1956.
2-2 Tracy, born 12-23-1957.
2-3 Marsha Elaine, born 12-12-1959.
2-4 Melissa, born 3-4-1962.


1-1 Katherine Miller, born 5-1-1954, married Harold


2-1 William A., born 12-6-1969.
2-2 Jonathan Kent, born 3-14-1972.


4-1 Carolyn Joyce, born 7-29-1938. Married John Calvin. divorced.
1-1 Robert W. Calvin, born 9-7-1962, married Diane Sperando.
1-3 Cynthia Ann Calvin, born 1-5-1970.

4-2 Patricia June, born 1-26-1942, married James Colvin 6-1961.
   2-1 Cathleen, born 7-10-1962.
   2-2 James L., born 6-30-1963.

4-3 Connie Elaine, married Wayne McCracken.

3-1 Patrick Wayne McCracken, born 4-8-1985.

   4-1 Rachel, born 5-5-1976.
   4-2 Rebecca, born 1-8-1980.
   4-3 James J., born 8-2-1982.

7-5 Joshua Harvey Roles, born October 28, 1926, Minco, Oklahoma.
   Married Vonna Ruth Brown September 3, 1949, at Pond Creek, OK.
   Joshua was in the Merchant Marines and WW II, stationed in Germany.
   He was an agent for the Rock Island Railroad. Vonna (Bonnie) was
   born January 11, 1929 at Freedom, OK. She died June 13, 1990 at
   Little Rock and is buried at the Little Rock U. S. Military Cemetery.
   Four children; Vonna Kay, Nancy Elaine, Marcia Lynn and James
   Harvey Roles. Joshua remarried to Earlene Johnson.

5-1 Vonna Kay, born November 23, 1953, Enid, OK. She is
   a Registered Nurse. Married Charles M. Cranston June 14,
   1978, Dallas, TX. Charles teaches at Vermilion State
   University, South Dakota.

   1-1 Cameron, born February 9, 1983, died Sept. 9,
       of meningitis. Buried at Hot Springs, AR.

   1-2 Lauren Elizabeth.

5-2 Nancy Elaine, born September 29, 1956, Enid, OK.
   Graduate of University of Arkansas, BS-MBA. Married
   Dennis Terry Officer. Dennis was born January 19, 1952.
   Teaches Economics and Finance at the University of
   Lexington. Two children.

   2-1 Kathryn Whitley.

   2-2 Stewart Taylor.
5-3 Marcia Lynn, born July 26, 1959, Wichita, KS. Graduate of University of Arkansas. Degree in Master of Science, Medical Science. Married John Brisco Bingham December 17, 1983, Little Rock, AR. John graduated from the University of Arkansas with a Law Degree. Two sons.

3-1 David Biscoe Bingham

3-2 Daniel Matthew Bingham

5-4 James Harvey Roles, born October 8, 1960, Wichita, KS. Graduate of the University of Arkansas. An Electrical Engineer. Married Katherine Minvielle October 6, 1990. They live in Florida.


b-8 Lydia V., the youngest child was born 1879 and was four years old when her mother Selina died. Lydia lived with her sisters Sara and Emma until she was grown and married to Roy Armstrong. Lydia was beautiful in the photo I saw. Her letters mostly to her brother Joshua were happy and informative. She kept him informed of her school activities and also begged him to come visit.

Lydia and Roy had a truck farming business. Roy was a Mason. Lydia died at Jacksonville, Texas. They were buried at Beaumont or Jacksonville, Texas. They had one son who died in the 1918 influenza epidemic. Roy left his estate to the Masons.

8-1 Marion Armstrong, born 1914, died 1918.

This concludes the family of Selina Halstead and Christopher Roles.

Old Homeplace of Mordicai Roles, built about 1863. Near the Roles Chapel at Indian Creek. (vacant for many years)
CHILDREN OF SELENA HALSTEAD AND CHRISTOPHER ROLES

Emma, Sarah & Lydia Roles

Joshua Roles and Wife Bessie Showen-Roles

James A. Roles of Fireco, WV
Son of Selena and Christopher Roles,
Son-James of Fayetteville, WV
About age 86-Photo made 1948.

Uzilia Fern Roles, Daughter of
Joshua and Bessie Showen-Roles
Granddaughter of Selena & Christopher
c. James was born at the farm in Monroe County, January 25, 1843. He was five years old when they moved to Bowyer Hollow and he was raised up in the old log house. James joined the Confederacy October 15, 1862 at Charleston, Company C, 36th Virginia Infantry. He was nineteen. James was captured at the battle of Winchester and became a POW, taken to Point Lookout, Maryland, December 19, 1863. He died there of fever April 4, 1864 and is in grave Nr. 1399. James was in the same company as his brother Henry. One can read about the 36th Virginia Infantry in a book of the same title, by J. L. Scott. H. E. Howard, Inc., Publisher, Lynchburg, Virginia.

d. Green (Greenbury) the third son was born March 21, 1846 and was a baby of two when they came to Raleigh County. Polk was President when Green was born. The war with Mexico began in 1846 and the next year Jesse James and Thomas Edison would be born.

Green grew up at the old homeplace and when he became eighteen he enlisted in the Confederate Army. On November 1, 1864 he was signed up by Lt. Col. Witcher for the duration of the war and was in Sweeney's Company, 34th Battalion at Wyoming County, West Virginia. This company had been recruited exclusively within enemy lines of non-conscription boys, assigned to the Battalion, per S. O. Nr. 130, Headquarters, West Virginia and East Tennessee, dated December 28, 1864. Green was in for about eight months and the war ended the following year in 1865.

Sometime between 1865 and 1870 Green and his brother Christopher went to Kanawha County to live. Green married Mary E. Given, December 18, 1871, a daughter of William and Eliza A. Given. Mary was born about 1846, Roane County, Virginia. Mary and Green farmed and lived at Wolf Pen Hollow.

They bought and sold land in Kanawha County. First, he acquired seventy five acres on Wolf Pen Run and Little Sandy Creek December 19, 1876 from John D. Lewis, forty three acres on Wolf Pen Run from William K. Given, September 4, 1883 (to Green and Mary). In 1889 he acquired seventeen acres from Alex M. Bruen located on Aaron's Fork and Little Sandy Creek, 1892 forty two acres on Wolf Pen from Perry Given and his wife. From William P. Given and wife, forty three acres on Wolf Pen and Little Sandy Creek in 1892. As a grantor, Green and Mary sold sixty acres to George Beckett, located on Wolf Pen Branch, 1884. One hundred seventeen acres to George W. Wolf et al in 1890 located on Aaron's Fork. Greenbury and wife sold forty three acres to William P. Given, located on Wolf Pen Branch. Seventy five acres to George Beckett by trust in 1892. Little Sandy, five and one half acres on Wolf Pen to S. A. Fogarty from Green and Mary.

Green may have been employed at something other than farming during his lifetime. At one time Green's sister Emily lived with them and worked in a restaurant until she married John Pauley. They soon moved to Ronceverte.

Green died November 12, 1928 of chronic endocarditis at age seventy five years and one month. Mary, a widow in 1929 continued to live with her son Perry and his family at Wolf Pen. Mary died about 1931 of chronic intestinal nephritis at age eighty five. Green and Mary are buried in the family cemetery in Walker Hollow.

It is thought that Green and perhaps Christopher returned to Bowyer Hollow to visit their younger brother William in later years. Their names were mentioned in the family and some think that Charles (William's son) saw or knew his uncle's Green and Christopher.
d-1 Emma Zetta was born 2-9-1874, Kanawha County, died 5-13-1941. Married William Henry Pierce, 1-13-1894. He was born 1-12-1870, Ohio, died 1-21-1952

1-1 Violet Lee, born 8-15-1895, died 4-20-1919. Some say that Violet and her sister Mabel drowned under the C&O bridge. They are buried in the family cemetery at Walker Hollow.


1-3 Mabel, born 4-19-1901, died 4-20-1919.


1-5 Jessie Ethyl, born 1-11-1906. Married Oather J. Mooney 9-20-1925. He was born 2-2-1901.

1-6 Camilla Ellen, born 5-20-1911. Married Roy Hall 8-9-1933, born 4-26-1905.

d-2 John, born 7-21-1875, died September 3, 1877 at the age of two.

1-1 IVon Clifford, born 1-22-1927, married Betty Lou Davis 12-24-1946.

2-1 Nancy Joyce, born 6-5-1951.

2-2 Rebecca Sue, born 12-12-1957, married William Fox.

2-3 Terri Renee, born 9-26-1964.

1-3 Kathv Jo, born 1-12-1959.

1-6 Lisa Sue, born 8-16-1974.

1-2 Robert William, born 4-21-1930, married Helen Young 8-12-1950.

2-1 Nancy Joyce, born 6-5-1951.

2-2 Rebecca Sue, born 12-12-1957, married William Fox.

2-3 Terri Renee, born 9-26-1964.

1-3 Katherine E., born 1-16-1934.
1-4 James Lincoln, born 4-12-1932, married Ora Burdette 8-19-1953.
   4-1 Sandra Kay, born 9-19-1954.
   4-2 James Kevin, born 11-23-1956.
   4-3 Jo Ann, born 4-3-1958.
   4-4 Melissa Mae, born 4-10-1967.
   4-5 Amy Dawn, born 4-13-1981.

   4-1 Randy Lynn, born 3-2-1955.
   4-2 Timothy Lee, born 6-26-1959.
   4-3 James Billy, Jr., born 1-2-1963.

1-5 Mary Sue, born 9-12-1936, married James Vance 12-24-1953.
   5-1 Diane Sue, born 4-18-1955.
   5-2 Patricia Lynn, born 10-6-1960.

3-2 Charles Edward, born 4-25-1905, died 12-21-1980 at age seventy five. Married Imogene E. Shaffer 7-12-1930. She was born 6-16-1912, died 10-1-1973, daughter of C. W. Shaffer and Mollie Hamlin.

   1-1 Mary Eva, born 3-18-1959.

   2-1 James Clinton, Jr., born 3-1-1953.
   2-2 Debra Ann, born 2-4-1955.
   2-3 Paul Michael, born 3-17-1957.

   3-2 Joseph Edward, born 7-6-1973.
   3-3 Travis Joshua, born 11-25-1978.

3-3 Lovell Clarence, born 3-20-1907, died 12-13-1984 at age seventy seven. Married Eula Mae Pauley 5-4-1929. She was born 2-18-1909 died 12-13-1953. Both are buried in the Baxter cemetery. Aaron's
Fork, Elkview. Eula was the daughter of Sylvester and Della Rahill. Lovell was a retired carpenter for Fredericks and Associates and a member of the Advent Christian Church.


1-1 Edna Charlene, born 4-3-1949.
1-2 Thomas E., born 1-9-1952.
1-3 Edward D., born 12-16-1954.

3-2 Kermit Wilford, born 1-8-1936, married Caroline Kay Cavender 6-8-1956. Caroline was born 7-12-1937. They live at Elkview and attend the Advent Christian Church.

2-1 Lois Marie, born 9-29-1957, married Nathan Quinn.
   (Adopted by Carolyn and Kermit at age twenty nine.)


3-5 Elmer, born 7-12-1912, died 4-10-1979. Married Alma Mae Page 7-31-1938, born 7-3-1919.

5-3 Patricia Ann, born 5-19-1957.


6-1 Charles Lovell Douglas, born 6-1-1937.

d-4 Fletcher (Letcher) born 3-25-1882. NFR

This concludes the family of Green and Mary Halstead.
GREENBUERY HALSTEAD, SON OF ALEXANDER AND EMILY KEATLEY

LOVELL CLARENCE HALSTEAD
OF PERRY WEB OF GREEN
AND MARY HALSTEAD

KERMIT AND CAROLYN HALSTEAD
SON OF LOVELL OF PERRY W. OF
GREEN AND MARY HALSTEAD
Christopher was the first child born after the move to Raleigh County, April 4, 1848. Born two years before Raleigh County had a county seat, established in 1850. He grew up in the old log house at Bowyer.

It is believed that Christopher went along with his brother Green when they enlisted in the Confederate Army. After the war was over the two brothers went to Kanawha County to live. Charleston was a mustering out place after the war and it is possible that they were in the area. Their great aunt and uncle Nancy and Caleb Toler had moved to Kanawha a few years before the war and they had cousins living there. Their great uncle Amos and Nancy had moved to Kanawha many years before and they may or may not have known about this family and their many cousins.

In the Kanawha census of 1870 Christopher was working for John Summers. He married Victoria Virginia Vickers September 4, 1873 in Kanawha County. Victoria was the daughter of William Henry and Emily Pauley Vickers. She was born December 14, 1856, Kanawha County. At the time of the marriage she was living with her mother and stepfather Jacob Bush. Her brothers were Daniel and Charles, sisters were Cynthia and Mary, two half sisters, Sarah and Ida. They lived at Elk township. The couple lived next door to her mother.

Christopher acquired one hundred forty three acres from John D. Lewis on Ruffner's Branch, Little Sandy Creek. February 12, 1879 and forty three acres from Charles C. Lewis August 25, 1899. Little Sandy heads near the community of Frame. The one hundred forty three acres cost four dollars an acre. Christopher owned other property as well. He sold fifty acres to Daniel D. Vickers, located on Ruffner's Fork.

Christopher was appointed surveyor of road precinct twelve, Elk district in March 1880, and was a school trustee in 1899. Christopher farmed and was working as a hotel keeper in Charleston in 1900 at age fifty three. The census of 1910 shows Christopher and their son Clayton living in the Elk River area, farming.

It is believed that Green and Christopher kept in touch with their brother William and sisters Celia, Lydia and Emily. In 1888 Celia and Lydia sent Christopher locks of their hair. Lydia's was woven into a flower. He kept them folded in one of his old documents. (I have a xerox copy of it)

Christopher died May 28, 1914 of heart problems. He was sixty six. Victoria lived with her widowed nephew Squire B. Jarrett later on in Charleston and was housekeeping. Victoria died October 15, 1937 at the age of seventy nine. At the time of her death she was living in a six room house located at 213 Wyoming Street in Charleston. Victoria and Christopher are buried at Frame. Their children were William Howard, James Floyd, James Floyd, Cora Edith, Silas Howard, Clayton Everette, Charles Bennett, Mary and Flossie Pearl.
e-1 William Howard, born July 21, 1874, died September 8, 1876 at age two.

e-2 James Floyd, born July 3, 1875, died October 21, 1876 at age one.

e-3 James Floyd, born October 10, 1877. Giving a son the name of one previously
deceased was a common practice in early times.

e-4 Cora Edith was born May 15, 1879, died July 11, 1928. She married William "Boge"
S. Lynch May 9, 1897. He was born October 19, 1873, died November 9, 1962 at
age eighty nine. William farmed. Both are buried in Roane County.

4-1 Lester Dee, born May 16, 1898, died July 21, 1898.

4-2 Gladys Mary, born June 29, 1899 at Walton, Roane County, died January 22,
1993 at age ninety three. Married Samuel R. Cromwell November 30, 1919.
He was the son of Robert and Alford Cromwell. Samuel was a carpenter and
they lived at Culloden, WV. Samuel died January 22, 1977 at age eighty.
They are buried in Cabell County.

2-1 Nina Marie, born September 17, 1920.
2-2 Mary Louise, born January 31, 1924.
2-3 Ruby Ann, born July 16, 1931.

4-3 Vada Virginia, born July 22, 1902, died December 20, 1983 at age eighty one.
Married C. A. Sinnett, son of H. M. and Nan Nicholas Sinnett.

3-1 James Franklin, born 11-11-1923.
3-2 Frieda Irene, born April 23, 1925.
3-3 Betty Jane, born May 16, 1926.

4-4 Mabel Claire, born July 7, 1904. Married Dennis Estil Cunningham May 29,
1925. Son of Robert and Annabel Rhodes-Cunningham. They owned and
operated Cunningham Dry Cleaners at Charleston. Dennis died August 15,
1933 at age twenty eight. Mabel lives at Randolph Street in Charleston.

4-1 Robert William, born May 4, 1926.
4-2 Oley Lee, born February 13, 1928.
4-3 Dennis Estil, born November 15, 1931.

4-5 Golda Mae, born August 6, 1906, married Elmer H. Booth, son of Fred and
Anna Booth.

4-6 Eugenia Faye, born October 12, 1908. Married Weavil Boggess, August 28,
1930. He was the son of D. M. and Maggie Casto-Boggess.

6-1 Doris June, born June 2, 1931.
6-2 Patricia Ann, born December 30, 1933.
4-7 Dorothy Edith, born December 12, 1913, died February 6, 1980 at age sixty six. Married James Arnett Ranson October 15, 1937. He was born August 22, 1917, died December 7, 1975 at fifty eight.

7-1 James A. Jr., born July 7, 1939.

4-8 Nina Gertrude, born December 12, 1917. Married Fred E. George, April 11, 1951.


9-1 Charles Rodney, born September 21, 1948, married Barbara Masters.


2-2 Jennifer L., born 11-12-1978.

9-3 Timothy Ray, born May 15, 1958, married Sandra Kay Wallace.

3-1 Rachel Kay, born 2-3-1988.

4-10 Roy Ernest, born September 28, 1926, died November 5, 1926.


Joseph died May 13, 1983 at Huntington, WV. He was a retired photographer and owner of WV Professional Enterprises, Inc., and Barta Studio's of Photography. He was a member of Enslow Park Presbyterian Church. Life member and Past President of the American Business Club of Huntington. Past President of Board of Directors of Cabell County Cerebral Palsey Council.


Married Susan Dowling Neal, August 31, 1963. Daughter of Austin Neal, Jr., and Elizabeth Jean Sinclair. Susan graduated from Marshall College with a degree in Nursing. She and Joe live in Barboursville, WV.


2-1 Ryan Christopher, born 2-16-1985.

5-2 Velma Marie, born September 25, 1915 at Frame. Married Gene LeRoy 1932. Gene was born July 21, 1912, died October 11, 1991. They were divorced in 1939. Velma began a career working for the WV State House. Two years with the Department of Highways and the Conservation Commission, Division of State Parks for thirty years. (Forty years for the state of WV). Velma was a member of Ruffner Presbyterian Church and Eastern Star. Volunteer at Kanawha Valley Hospital and the Charleston Medical Center.


1-1 Sharon Kay, born 2-27-1957.
1-3 Sheila Lynn, born 8-3-1961.


1-1 Alaina, born 8-25-1973, San Diego, CA.
1-2 Jerry, born 12-4-1977, El Paso, CO.


4-1 James Madison III, born 4-8-1949, married Jolene Hemon 4-30-1986.
4-2 Howard Bennett, born 11-12-1951, married Michele Donlon.

2-1 Andrew, born 10-19-1975.
2-3 Peter Halstead, born 11-12-1980.
2-4 Patrick, born 10-2-1983.

5-5 Raymond Eugene, born 3-8-1927, died 1-26-1971 at forty three. Buried at St. Albans, WV.

6-1 Clayton Everette, born April 1, 1884, died May 28, 1963 at age seventy nine. Married to Martha M. Hammack June 29, 1914. She was born February 2, 1893. They are buried at St. Albans.

6-2 Arthur "Kayo" Lowell, born February 28, 1920, died October 21, 1985 at age sixty five. Married Isabelle Slater, born October 10, 1924, died October 24, 1991. They are buried at St. Albans.

1-1 David Michael, born 5-29-1966.
1-3 Tracy Nicole, born 3020-1972.


2-2 Timothy, born 10-9-1975.

6-3 Maxine "Mac May", born March 5, 1928. Married William Calhoun, June 29, 1949. He was a teacher and principal. Maxine is a retired teacher.

1-1 Samantha, born 11-15-1983.
1-2 Tabitha, born 12-30-1986.

e-7 Charles Bennett, born June 3, 1886, died July 15, 1967 at eighty one. Married Edith Sink December 31, 1918. Edith was born May 26, 1896, daughter of Charles and Martha Weese-Sink. Charles was Mayor of South Charleston and a member of the House of Delegates. Was elected in 1926 to the Republican Legislature. Had a Degree from Marshall College at Huntington. Merchant in Roane County oil fields in 1917. Member of IOOF and Knights of Pythias. Marine Corp, WW I. Lived at 136 Fifth Avenue in retirement. Buried at Cunningham Memorial Park, St. Albans.

7-1 Juanita Pearl, born 2-17-1921, married Charles Neas 2-4-1950.

2-1 John T., born 6-2-1951.

e-8 Mary Emily, born April 21, 1890, died November 28, 1975 at age eighty five. Married Charles Evan Neely 5-16-1910. Charles died December 5, 1960. Worked for the State Road-Commission and was a member of the First Advent Christian Church, Charleston. They are buried at St. Albans.

8-1 Virginia Frances, born after 1910. Married Luther McTeer.
1-1 David McTeer.

8-2 Christine, married William Keeley.
2-1 Robert.

8-3 William Adrian, died as an infant.

This concludes the family of Christopher and Victoria Halstead, of Alexander and Emily.
e-9 Flossie Pearl, born November 25, 1894, died July 15, 1895 at seven months.

This concludes the family of Christopher and Victoria Vickers-Halstead.
Mary Virginia of Silas and her husband Joseph Barta, Jr.

Charles Bennet of Christopher & Victoria

Mary Virginia of Christopher, husband Charles Neely
William Edward was the youngest son, born July 14, 1851 at the old Bowyer Creek homeplace. Millard Fillmore was President and in ten years Lincoln would be President. West Virginia would become a state in thirteen years and the hot dog was invented when William was a year old.

William grew up at the Bowyer farm and had always loved the place. He and his brothers helped on the farm until the older ones went off to join the Confederacy. William (Bill) was about eleven when the war began and he saw his four brothers leave to begin the fight for state’s rights. Three would come home. James died in a POW camp in Maryland. William and his dad kept the farm going and he told the family that he worked hard as a boy. Green and Christopher weren’t old enough to enlist until about a year before the war ended. Both were very young and perhaps left without their parents permission. There was only one mention of Christopher being in Sweeney’s and no proof of it.

No one knows for sure when William’s parents moved two miles down the road to build a new two story log house but was probably sometime after the war when William was nearly grown. After the war his brothers Green and Christopher went to Kanawha County to live. Henry was married and lived in Raleigh County. His older sister Selina had married and left home when William was young. William was the only son left at home after the war. His father died a few years after the war, then it was he who carried on with his mother and three younger sisters. Henry sold William three hundred acres in 1874, William also owned the old Bowyer Creek farm.

William married Nancy Vince Jane Massie (Massey) December 15, 1877 in Raleigh County by his brother Henry Halstead. Jane as she was called was born March 13, 1855. She was the daughter of Thomas and Mary Jane Massie. Thomas was born in Patrick County, Virginia and died December 24, 1884 in Mercer County, West Virginia. Thomas was the son of Ancel Massie born 1801 who had married Elizabeth Via September 10, 1827 in Patrick County Virginia.

William built a two story log home in sight of his mother’s home which faced the hill and cemetery where Alexander was buried. He and Jane raised their children at Whitby and he farmed and was also a carpenter. Their three sons and five daughters grew up at Whitby and went to school located at the overflowing well. They were more than average in looks. The boys were tall and slim with dark curly hair and the girls were slim and pretty. Their son Charles was my grandfather.

After the children were nearly grown William and Nancy were getting older and William longed to move back to Bowyer Creek. He sold the Whitby land to a coal company and resettled back on Cal Lilly mountain where he grew up. It took years to get paid for the land he sold at Whitby finally going to court. The money he and his mother received for their land was a pittance compared to the millions made from coal that was mined.

When the railroad was built Whitby became a very busy place. William, his brother Henry and his sons John and Charles helped to build the new houses, post office and company store for the hundreds of people who moved there to work and live. A school was built and Whitby became a coal town. (A few of the old houses are still there and are about one hundred years old).

The Tolley’s were neighbors and lifelong friends. Jess Tolley married Jane’s sister Amanda Massie, Christopher Tolley lived at Bacontown (Jon Ben) 1861 and was a Confederate soldier, farmer and carpenter. His brother Callahil E. Tolley settled on Piney Creek 1861, a landowner and millwright. Later he lived and died at Tolleytown and is buried there.
William and Nancy moved back to Bowyer Creek and built a new ranch type farm house in sight of Alexander's first home where William grew up. His brother Henry and others perhaps helped build the new house. There was a front porch that went nearly the way around the house and had grapevines growing up on each end at the front providing a shade in the summer. Trees shaded the yard and there were flowers all around. There was a stile at the fence in front where William helped Jane up on her horse and helped arrange her skirts. There were the fruit tree's and orchards planted by Alexander. The house had gas lights and fireplaces and it was a pretty place. Four generations worked the same fields, roamed the same woods and swam in the same creeks, including myself. Their son Charles soon married and moved into the old log house vacated by Alexander years before.

Daughters of Charles (granddaughters of William and Nancy) have loving memories of their grandparents which they shared with me. Aunt Blanche said she loved sitting in grandma's kitchen watching her cook and smelling the spices. Aunt Edith remembered her long black dresses and how she went about her chores singing hymns. Mildred said that grandma taught her how to churn and make butter and she could go to grandma with her private problems. Jane was a proud lady whose home was spotless and always smelled of good food cooking, kept cinnamon cake in the pantry and was generous with the grandchildren.

Grandchildren were not allowed by their parents to visit unless they were asked or were running errands. Mother (Mildred) said grandma was so particular that her feather beds were smoothed out by rolling over the feathers with a broom stick every day. She was about fourteen when grandma became ill with cancer and she went over early in the morning before school to cook breakfast for them and their youngest son Landen and ran errands after school. Grandpa was a big built man, tall with curly dark hair and a mustache who drank coffee from a mustache cup. He always had fresh water drawn and wood cut for the stove.

Aunt Edna said Grandma was the most wonderful person who ever lived and felt that grandma really loved her and gave her love and kindness when she really needed it and made her feel special and rewarded her with gingerbread for errands. Grandpa loved Jane with his whole heart and always brought her a trinket or pretty dish from his trips to the store. Grandma had sandy brown hair, was kind and soft spoken and wore gold frame glasses and Edna thought her sister Nora looked a lot like her. Grandpa was a kind and loving man who was always clean and gave them treats such as apples, chestnuts and watermelon in the summer. He shaved off bites of dried beef for them with a big barlow knife.

Edna recalled being about twelve when grandma became bedridden and she tried to sneak in to see her but was not allowed and when she died Edna managed to sneak in and saw her grandmother laid out on a table. She had never had such feelings and was afraid to tell that she had ever been there, it was the first real grief and heartache she had ever known. Before the funeral her dad took her and the others in privately to see grandmother and she was wearing a beautiful grey dress with a high collar, holding a pink rose and looked beautiful.

Their youngest son Landen had been given a new Buick touring car for his twenty first birthday and left home when his dad died and only came back to visit. Grandpa was broken hearted when Jane died and he sat on the front porch every day and cried. He lived for about six months after she died. Jane died May 19, 1927 and William died November 1927. They were buried on a hill nearby chosen by William on Cal Lilly mountain. A large double gravestone marks their graves, surrounded by trees and is
hidden in a wooded area.

After William and Nancy died Charles moved his large family out of the old Alexander home and into the now empty house.

Years later after all had left the old Bowyer Creek farm the whole countryside was rearranged by strip miners and there is not a visible trace of the old house, farmlands, meadows or orchards left to indicate that anyone had ever lived there. The spring water and little creek are blocked by dirt piled around by the strippers and there is a big swamp there now. Whitby became a ghost town, the coal was mined out by the big companies by the late 1930's or 40's.

The children of William and Nancy were John Reynolds, Rosa, Charles, Dicey, Goldie, Sylvia, Arabel and Landen.
f-1 John Reynolds was the first child born to William and Nancy, December 1, 1878. Hayes was President at the time. Long dresses were in style and horses were the mode of transportation and Albert Einstein was a year old.

John and his brother Charles were the only boys among five sisters until their baby brother Landen came along. John grew up at the old log house at Whitby. He was tall, slim with brown hair and blue eyes. He helped with the farming and he and his brother Charles helped build the houses at Whitby when the railroad and coal companies started up.

A story told in the family of John's brother Charles was when the boys were young, they were walking home late one dark night and were passing by the home of a family of boys they knew who were fearful of the dark. Just before reaching the designated place John and Charles removed their white underwear, then wearing their underwear over their heads began to make strange and mournful noises. Their friends were drawn outside to investigate and saw something white moving about in the yard and bushes, causing them considerable fear and excitement. They ran into the house and slammed the door. John and Charles being pleased with themselves walked on home. Later at school they heard that ghosts were seen in the area.

Cars became popular in John's lifetime and airplanes were invented. John was a farmer and carpenter, probably working with his uncle Henry when he was young. He married Margaret "Maggie" Snuffer, April 28, 1907. She was the daughter of John and Margaret Foster-Snuffer, born August 23, 1885. John and Margaret lived at Crab Orchard for many years before moving to Gallipolis, OH.


1-1 Garnet, born January 5, 1908, died about 1974, Columbus, Ohio. Buried at the Sutphin cemetery at Crab Orchard, WV. Married Holbart Green who preceeded her in death.

1-1 William Carl, Grove City, OH.
1-2 Mrs. Mary Stevens, Columbus, OH.

1-2 Brooke, born December 22, 1911, married James Bennett of Beckley, WV.

1-3 Mabel Maxine, born June 13, 1914, at Crab Orchard, WV. Married James Vest. Lived at Vinton, OH.

1-4 Hattie Crystal, born February 6, 1916, Crab Orchard, WV. Married Joe Clark. Lived at Alamosa, CO.

1-5 Dallis Jarrell, born April 9, 1924. Lives at Cincinnati, OH.

1-6 Willa Maye, born November 23, 1927. Lives at Columbus, OH.
1-7 Oscar, born and died after 1927, as an infant.

2-1 Basil Willis, married Virginia Pettry.

1-1 Harold Willis.
1-2 Glenn Willis.
1-3 Bobby Willis.
1-4 Billy Willis.

2-2 Elmer Roberts.

Rosa, daughter of William and Jane Massey and husband Charles Willis and baby Basil
Children of William and Nancy Jane Massie-Halstead

Goldie and Sylvia

Dicie and husband Prass Pitzer.
Baby Galina.

Landen

Above right: Arabel
Right: John Reynolds and wife Margaret Snuffer
Charles Ambus, born June 27, 1883, was the second son of William and Nancy Halstead. Chester A. Arthur was the President. The following year the Brooklyn Bridge was opened, the Washington Monument dedicated and the Statue of Liberty was received. Two years prior there was a fight at the O K Corral and a treatment for rabies was discovered.

Charles was raised in the old log house at Whitby and attended school at the overflowing well. The school was for all grades and was located between Whitby and Bowyer Hollow. Daisy Lilly was his last teacher and the school district was called Shady Springs. His dad was on the board of trustees. Charles was a smart man and a scholar of human nature.

Charles was a tall slender man over six foot, dark curly hair and blue eyes. He was very good looking. My grandmother fell in love with him from his picture. Grandad was soft spoken, of a serious nature and laughed often but not loud. He was a fair honest and good man who had many talents. He was his own veterinarian, could set broken bones, extract teeth, lance boils, resole shoes, butcher, blacksmith, farm and was an excellent carpenter who built many buildings on the farm and elsewhere. As a young man he worked with his uncle Henry building houses and he built the house next to the one Henry lived in at Eccles. He helped to build the Whitby houses when the coal company moved in and they were living back up on Bowyer Creek by that time.

His parents took in a young school teacher as a boarder in September 1907 while Charles was working away from home while they were still living at Whitby. Cordia Ann Lilly had just received a scholarship teaching certificate from Athens College and was starting to teach all grades in the one room school at the overflowing well at Whitby. Her sisters were teachers, her brother Sherman a doctor, another brother Clayton was a dentist. She was the daughter of Edmond Lilly and Clara Elizabeth Farley-Lilly of Camp Creek. She descended from a long line of Lilly’s on the Bluestone and the Farley’s of Pipestem.

The Lilly genealogy goes back to Robert Lilly born 1696 and Mary Moody of Virginia. The Lilly’s originated in Delisle, France and came to England with William the Conqueror in 1066. The Lilly genealogy has been researched, documented and printed several times and can be found in the LDS Ancestral Library.

Clara Elizabeth Farley was the great granddaughter of Francis Farley, Jr., who was born in 1726 and Nancy Blankenship. The Farley lineage has been traced back to Falaise, France and has been researched and documented. The Farley’s came to England with William the Conqueror in 1066 during the Norman Invasion. The early Farley’s came from Devon, England. Farleigh Castle has only the entrance and some foundation left and a little church where the Hungerfords are buried in southern England near Bath. (S & R Collection)

Francis Farley, Sr., was born 1703, Henrico County, Virginia and married Nancy Whitlow who was born 1706, Chesterfield County, Virginia. They and their neighbors the Ellisons were among the first families to settle in Greenbrier County. They had several encounters with the Indians and had to live in Farley’s Fort for long periods of time.
Francis Farley Jr., was a soldier of the American Revolution as well as a local militia and Indian fighter. During the Revolution Francis was with Clements Company who marched to the Carolina's to fight with General Green's army. Green had made a retreat across North Carolina pursued by British General Cornwallis. Green was joined by a large militia of nearly five thousand men and then attacked and defeated the British at Guilford, NC, thereby freeing the south from the enemy. General Green commanded all colonies south of Pennsylvania and New Jersey. (It is astonishing the miles they walked on foot from Virginia and other northern states to the Carolina's and further south through the wilderness and mountains on Indian trails and then back again. Presently, the trip is an all day journey from Georgia to West Virginia by car).

Cordia's mother Elizabeth Farley-Lilly could play and tune her piano and spin flax and wool. When we visited the old Lilly homeplace at Camp Creek in 1994, we noticed where she had tested paint colors on the inside of her closet walls. The old home is owned and occupied by their descendants and kept up nicely. Grandmother told us that she was three years old when her family moved into the big new house, from the log house nearby and she carried the sifter to the new house. (1891) Elizabeth died of tuberculosis in 1908. Edmond lived for several years after. They are buried in the Lilly family cemetery nearby.

Cordia Ann told me that she was a nineteen year "old maid" when she saw a picture of Charles at his parents home and decided that she would marry him. She was teaching by the time he returned home in the fall of 1907, they were in love before March, 1908.

In the spring of 1908 her family sent for Cordia to come home as her mother was very ill and not expected to live. The last letter Cordia received from her mother read "come home soon, I have a surprise for you" and signed the letter saying "bye bye my little girl" knowing the end was near. Charles took her home to Camp Creek March 11, 1908, her mother died two weeks later. Charles returned home and gave out her school assignments and graded papers during her absence. They wrote to each other for about a month. The letters were kept and we were allowed to read them. They politely expressed how much they missed one another and Charles added x'es at the end of his letter. After her mother was buried Charles returned to Camp Creek and brought Cordia back to Whitby. They married April 20, 1908, her teaching career ended after one term. The surprise mentioned by her mother was a feather tick she had made for her.

Charles and Cordia started their married life in the first house built by Alexander on Bowyer Creek. About this time or sometime before, Charles parents had also moved back to Bowyer and lived in their new house on the ridge just in sight. They farmed and raised cattle, sheep, chickens, turkeys and built buildings he needed; granary, poultry house, corn crib and blacksmith shop. There was already a garage that he used later for his equipment that was first built for the surrey with fringe on top. They worked from dawn to dusk and went to church on Sunday. They raised fourteen children plus two grandchildren.
Cordia was good with home remedies but could not save their second son Mason, who died at age seven with flux disease. There were no miracle drugs and death could and did come swiftly. He was a handsome youngster who probably died of dehydration. Cordia wanted her son to be buried in the family cemetery at Camp Creek and he was taken there in a horse drawn wagon accompanied by the family. Their only child who did not grow up. Sick children were catered to and attended to carefully, always fearing the consequence. The other children grew up with the usual trials and hardships of the times in a place I thought was wonderful.

When I was growing up they lived in the house vacated by William and Nancy after their death. There was a family room in the center of the house where we gathered around the fireplace on cold winter evenings and loved on our baby cousins. The dining room had a large oblong table that seated about eight or ten, near the kitchen with large pantry. The house was always neat and clean and we had clean hands when we sat down to eat. Grandad was a stern man and dinner time was orderly, however, when he left the room Charles Jr., would pass you a biscuit with a wound up baseball pitch that either hit us on the head or shattered on the wall behind us. Sunday dinner was a feast of many different things cooked by grandmother and her daughters and there was lots of everything. I ate hardily and was always hungry. We girls when little would sleep three or four in a bed sometimes lying crosswise. The spare bedroom for company had a large picture on the wall of three terrified horses running scared in a thunderstorm that I thought was interesting.

Grandad had three horses, a dog and a cat or two. We could ride the horses if we didn’t run them. Charles Jr., was apt to do that though. They didn’t allow us to romp on the hay in the barn loft, once we were lying in the hay loft eating a bucket of sweet apples and telling ghost stories and saw grandad coming to get us. We jumped out of the hayloft which was quite a distance, especially for the little ones and we ran off through the apple orchard. The following Sunday we were told that he had put a big snake in the barn, that ended our fun in the hay.

We tried to be good because we knew that life could end anytime and the end of time could also happen any day or night. We didn’t worry about about it but thought about the end of time occasionally and sometimes thought it was happening when something out of the ordinary occurred. One Sunday my young aunts told of being awed by the northern lights a few evenings previously. At dusk they had seen a huge beautiful curtain hanging down from the sky in the most beautiful colors and were thinking that this must be the end of time. Grandmother explained what it was and they enjoyed the show for about twenty minutes.

Another time there was a terrible storm with hurricane winds and hail. Tree limbs were crashing down and everyone huddled inside. Anne was looking out of the window and screamed "there goes a hail ball as big as my head", which was found later to be the chamber pot that had blown off the back porch and had sailed by the window. She said she thought that day was the end of time.

It was quiet at the farm and loud noises were few, if ever. However, one night when all were asleep in the middle of the night when the heat from a dying fireplace had heated some jars of canned food stored in a closet beside the fireplace. One jar exploded and set off the other jars one by one with bomb like explosions, everyone
jumped out of bed with no idea of what was happening or where and thought it must be the end of time. They were relieved later on, even when a big mess had to be cleaned up.

One Sunday morning we were greeted by grandmother who was bruised black, blue, green and yellow which scared us speechless. She told us she was alright and that she had been driving the horses and wagon during hay harvest and the horses got scared or something and ran away with her hanging on for her life. She fell down in the wagon between the seat and floor, trying not to fly out of the wagon. One of the men ran down the horses at the fence line, caught and calmed them down. It could have been the end of grandmother but she had no broken bones.

The days were never long enough for us kids, we made our own fun and there were no toys. There was a house of scales where grandad weighed the sheep before and after the shearing by driving a dozen or so in at a time and weighed them, their weight after shearing gave him the weight of his wool. This job was the worst of all and we sometimes helped by holding down the sheep while they were being sheared. We liked to play in the scale house and weigh ourselves.

The oldest children knew and loved their grandparents William and Nancy who lived nearby remembering their love and kindness. No other people had ever lived at Bowyer Creek before Alexander and no one has lived there since Charles and Cordia left. One of my uncles told me that he thought an old trapper by the name of Bowyer was living there when The Halsteads came to live there. It was a beautiful place with lots of big trees, flowers, woods and creek. We knew the name of every tree and flower, what was poisonous and what was not. I often wondered why my mother had left to get married and live in a coal camp. Mildred was the oldest daughter and the first to marry at age seventeen and I was born a year later and grew up with her younger sisters and little brother Charles. Two of my aunts and one uncle were younger than I and two aunts a little older who seemed like sisters and brother.

Perhaps the reader will indulge me in remembering some of those old times for the benefit of my grandchildren who may find it interesting.

My parents, aunts and uncles took my grandparents to church on Sunday. My little brother Jimmy and I were dropped off as they picked up Grandmother and Grandad. We had a wonderful day playing. Occasionally a fight would occur between any two of the group which sometimes lasted off and on all day. One summer vacation I was helping to hoe the corn rows which seemed to be miles long and I had a fierce encounter with my uncle Charles (my age) and each of us had a row to hoe and were supposed to keep up together. I was slow, hot and tired and not keeping up. Grandad sent Charles back to help me catch up and he was mad as a hornet at having to do his work and mine so he pushed me around all afternoon finally hitting me on the head with his hoe handle. We had a good fight and I lost but I gained courage and lost my fear of fighting, accompanied with lots of adrenaline which came in handy a little later.
When school started that fall Jo Ann W. followed me home from school stepping on my heels and telling me that I had stolen her boyfriend which was news to me. A fight was brewing all the way until we reached the store and post office and we had our fracas on the post office porch. Many men were hanging around for the second shift of work and they enjoyed the show. They chose sides cheering us on saying "get her blondie and get her red". I was the blonde and Jo Ann was red head. I used my new skills with help of adrenaline and after it was over I considered myself to be the winner because I didn't cry. Days later I learned that Jodie Luchini had written a note to me and she had it. At age nine I didn't have boyfriends and didn't want one.

Our fights usually ended by name calling and insults of how ugly we were or being called a "pop eyed liar" and then telling each other to stop acting like a dying dog in a hailstorm. Mostly we had fun and were never bored and explored the woods, climbed the trees and played in the orchard and meadow. We climbed a huge black cherry tree one Sunday and ate all the ripe cherries and looked forward to the same the next week but there was a mean old bull in that field the following Sunday. Loggers came one summer to buy and cut down some of grandads trees. They left behind a huge mountain of sawdust and we had great fun jumping down from a tall tree nearby. Charles could climb to the top and turn over two or three times before hitting bottom. Some summer evenings supper would be cooked out on open fires when molasses was made and we ate the taffy.

Grandmother was a sweet and loving woman, she was beautiful when she was young. I loved to watch her comb her long hair before putting it up in the morning. She was small and slim with brown hair, hazel eyes and wore a size four or five shoe that fit me when I was about eight or nine and she let me clomp around in her good shoes. She told us ghost stories and read our good fortunes from the grounds in coffee cups. Out on the ridge in the mornings while feeding the chickens she sang hymns. I think of her in church when we sing Amazing Grace and Precious Memories.

They had moved from the old Alexander house to the new house vacated by my great grandparents before I was born. The old house stood empty and we played in it until it was torn down in the late thirties. Mother and the oldest children were born in the old house, the younger ones grew up in the newer home.

My grandparents had a good life and were respected by their family and friends. They helped others in times of need and had lots of farm food for their family during the depression years. Grandad served on the jury and was active in school functions. A school official was once riding up Cal Lilly mountain and shouted down to grandad who was putting up hay in the field down below and asked him if he would serve on the school board and swore him in while astride his horse and then rode on.

Their children owned cars when grown, grandad never owned or drove a car and he rode his horses wherever he needed to go until he died. When riding down to the Whiby post office on "old Bill" that horse would stop at a certain tree and go no further and stood and waited until grandad walked on and returned to the tree. His sons and daughters took them to church, Lilly reunions and their own houses for visits and anywhere they wanted to go.

Grandad was particular about his horses and took good care of them. When Charles
was about fifteen he took grandads most spirited horse "Dan" to horse races held on the week-ends by the local farmers at Coal City. Entry fee's were the cash prize. The races were cancelled after about four or five week-ends when Charles usually came home the winner. Grandad probably never knew that his best horse was winning races.

My grandparents loved and respected one another and I never saw any unkindness between them, however, one day at dinner grandad was lecturing Charles which was not out of the ordinary when suddenly grandmother stood up from the table and just jumped up and down several times then went to the front porch and sat in her rocker. (Reminded me of Mammy Yokum in the funnies) This caused considerable excitement but we continued to eat in silence and not a word was spoken. When grandad finished eating he left the table and headed for the porch, whereas we all raced to the front parlor window for more excitement. He leaned down and kissed her on the forehead and asked "have you cooled down Mammy?" I was stunned at her unusual behavior and we all laughed later, especially grandmother at the commotion she had caused. We minded about as good as we could and were occasionally threatened with a skutching. I learned recently that skutching was an old word that meant the beating of flax stems before they were bleached and woven.

Raising fourteen children plus two was an endeavor physically and financially. Their lives seemed to run smoothly and jobs were delegated to each one and expected to be done in record time with discipline along the way, although I never saw any punishment being handed out. The older children say they worked too hard, hadn't much privacy, were never allowed to talk back and received a slap if they did. As youngsters they had their fights, winning some and losing some. Compliments were rare, practically unheard of and no one was spoiled unless they were sick. The girls were modest and shy, all believing that they were homely. (None were) Advice from their parents was "always tell the truth, be content with what you have, count your blessings, be proud of your accomplishments, don't complain or turn away a person in need, and if you marry a blister, you sit on it. Some did and were wiser the second time. During my lifetime I never heard anyone say I love you or I'm sorry. Perhaps understood.

There was no electricity at the Bowyer farm and clothes were washed by boiling and stirring them in a big iron kettle outside on an open fire in the early years. We carried many buckets of water from the spring on wash day. Every night fresh water was brought in for the next morning and wood for the stove cut before bedtime. Grandad always said if the house caught fire the water bucket would burn first.

After I was grown the Bowyer farm was sold and my grandparents bought a more modern farm which was more accessible and comfortable, located at Glen Daniels. It was a nice two story with electricity and situated on more sloping hills and the younger children finished school and graduated from Trap Hill High School. Grandad died of heart problems March 1955. Aunt Nora moved in with grandmother until they sold the farm and bought a house at Beckley. The farm they had is now covered by Lake Stevens and is a state park.

Grandmother lived to be ninety seven. She was surrounded by her children and grandchildren who provided for all her needs and took care of her until she died October 22, 1985. During her last days she was in a nursing home and her family
visited once or twice every day. Grandmother brought so much joy and happiness to my life as well as all the others and I loved her.

Charles and Cordia are buried at Sunset Memorial Park cemetery at Beckley along with several of their family. An era ended with their passing. They came from the earliest pioneer settlers in southern West Virginia during the late seventeen hundreds, soldiers in George Washington's army during the Revolution and Indian fighters.

Grandmother was aware of her French background and had mentioned to us once that her folks had killed some Indians. The Farley's including Francis Farley, Sr., Francis, Jr., his son Drewry are mentioned in the history books. Also Josiah Meadows who accompanied George Rogers Clark on his expedition. After the war Josiah became a Baptist preacher and started the Bluestone Primitive Baptist Church which is still there.

Unbearable grief is suffered in silence as our family passes on and none are forgotten. Nine of the fourteen are living as of this date. All people have little faults and ours would be the first to admit theirs so I choose to mention the good in the following capsulted biographies that follow of the fourteen children plus two, with some recollections of themselves and each other. They answered my questions and unbeknown to each other had the same to say, more or less. The children were Tennis, Mason, Mildred, Bill, Nora, Blanche, Edna, Paul, Edith, Ruby, Anne, Charles, Lois and Mary and grandchildren Cordia and James.
First Children of Charles and Cordia
Bill and Mildred
Mason and Tennis
1916

(Below)
Edith, Paul, Edna, Blanche,
Bill and Tennis
About 1926
FIVE SONS OF CHARLES AND CORDIA HALSTEAD

TENNIS AND ALICE

MASON

PAUL

CHARLES

BILL
Nine Daughters of Charles and Cordia Halstead - Oldest to Youngest

Above: Mildred Aliff and Nora Atkins
Below: Blanche Martin and Edna Nolan
Edith Lilly

Ruby Matejovsky-Crooks

Lois Caines-Fawcett

Anne Halsey

Mary Lucas-Rogers
Beaver Dam on Bowyer Creek 1998

Summer at Bowyer Hollow 1938

Jimmy Aliff, Anne Halstead-Halsey, Dee Aliff-Wheaton, Sherman Halstead & Charles Halstead
3-1 Tennis T. was born January 11, 1909, died May 5, 1994 of heart failure. The year he was born Theodore Roosevelt was President, Peary discovered the North Pole and the year previously Ford introduced the Model T. Ford.

Tennis the first child was born in the old log house built by Alexander at Bowyer about 1847. Being the oldest boy he worked hard on the farm and grew up disliking farmwork and wanted no part of it once he was grown. He was young when he took his first paying job in the mines and soon became a superintendent which continued thereafter.

Tennis took pride in his appearance and dressed nicely. He hired his sister Mildred to iron his white shirts and make lunch for him every day and was generous with his money. He bought and wrecked a few cars in his young years, one of the first was an old Moon which lay upside down in the meadow until it rusted away. Mildred said he had lots of chores as a youngster and never seemed to be caught up and was quiet and obedient. Edna said Tennis was very smart and usually played his cards close to the vest. He bought his little sisters Edith and Ruby the first dolls they ever owned. Tennis was gone from home by the time the younger children came along and they hardly knew him as a brother. Lois said he tease her and called her a "chinaman" when he was tipsy. He let me drive his new car before I knew how to drive and was brave enough to ride with me. Tennis was good hearted and loved his children, stepchildren and their families.

About 1932 Tennis married Vera A. Owens, the daughter of Raymond and Naomi Owens. She was well liked by his sisters and was very pretty. However, the marriage didn't last and both remarried. They were parents of two children, Sherman and Sue Carol. Vera remarried to Dan Lilly and several years later Tennis married Mary Alice Hatfield-Lively. Alice had been married previously and had two young sons, Bill and Bob.

Alice was the granddaughter of "Devil" Anse and Levicie Hatfield. Her father was Willis Hatfield, their youngest son. Alice remembered her grandparents very well and the feud was over long before she was born. She knew all about it. I loved to talk to her about the feud. Sometime during the forties a movie was shown about the Hatfields and McCoys at the local theater in Beckley. Alice said it wasn't the real story and I was told that there was a friendly scuffle between some young McCoys and Hatfields in the lobby after the movie.

Tennis was sick for many years before he died and suffered greatly from rheumatoid arthritis. He was respected and well taken care of by his family and grandchildren, especially Mark and Opal Lively, grandson of his wife Alice. His brothers and sisters visited often offering help if he needed it. Alice died of heart problems April 10, 1990. They are buried at Sunset Memorial Park cemetery, in Beckley.

1-1 Sherman Owen Halstead was born July 6, 1933 at Lillybrook, WV. He married Delia Theresa Bilter, daughter of Frederick and Anna Alvino Bilter. She was born June 20, 1938 in Brooklyn, NY.

Sherman spent many Sundays at the farm with his dad as a youngster and he followed his uncle Charles around. Sherman told me that Charles let him shoot
uncle Paul's shotgun once which knocked him down and nearly dislocated his
his shoulder. Ordinarily, Sherman was a good little boy who never got into
trouble. He and his wife Dee lived at Hopewell, VA. He owned and operated
a Texaco station, Dee was a government employee.

Sherman died of leukemia July 25, 1998 and is buried at Bermuda Memorial
Park, Chester, VA. To my knowledge Sherman is the only one who has died
of leukemia in our family.

1-1 Sherman "Chip" Jr., was born June 17, 1960.

1-2 Theresa Ann, born August 6, 1963. Married Lance Leibler February
14, 1986.
   2-1 Heather, born April 7, 1987.
   2-2 Terrance J., born October 6, 1990.

1-2 Sue Carol, born July 14, 1935 at Lillybrook, WV. Married Billy James.
Second marriage to Richard McCool June 11, 1983 in Prince George County,
VA. Son of Leonard and Marie McCool of Yonkers, NY. Dick is President
of Sudic Enterprises and Sue is Vice President. They live in Richmond.
Sherman and Sue have a half brother Harry Lilly, who lives in Prince George
County, VA.

   2-1 Allen Lee James, born March 21, 1954, married Sharon Hensley,
       July 6, 1985.

   2-2 Vera Ann, born May 5, 1957, married Michael Anthony Barber,
       May 1, 1987.

       2-1 Anthony Michael, adopted son of Vera and Michael.

The sons of Alice Lively Halstead:

1-3 Bill Lively, born October 17, 1927, died March 4, 1996. Married Edith Barker
of Beckley, WV. Bill was incurably ill with heart problems and killed himself.

   3-1 Harriett, married Richard Pauley.

   3-2 Edward, married Robin Lively.

   3-3 Linda, married David Chaney.

1-4 Bob Lively married Yvonne and were parents of two. Remarried to Dianne.

   4-1 Marilyn, married Bruce Boyer.
       1-1 Emily.

   4-2 Mark Lively, married Opeal.
       2-1 Victoria.
       2-2 Sarah Alice.
Mason French Halstead was the second son of Charles and Cordia, born April 2, 1910, died about 1917 with the flux disease at age seven. Our only picture of Mason shows that he was a handsome little boy. The family took him to Camp Creek in a wagon and he was buried in the Lilly family cemetery.

Mildred Carmen was the first daughter, born December 20, 1911. Howard Taft was President. A year later the luxury liner Titanic sank and Arizona became a state.

Mildred (my mother) has assisted me in gathering our family history by remembering family stories and knew her grandparents, except grandma Lilly who died before she was born. William and Jane lived on the ridge nearby and she remembered visiting grandpa Lilly at Camp Creek. Everyone beyond Alexander was unknown to Mom and everyone in our family and nothing was known about Alexander or Emily.

Being the oldest girl Mildred felt motherly taking care of her younger sisters and brothers and have always been close to each other. She loved having them come for visits after she was married and was always willing to help them in any way she could.

As a youngster she was timid and shy, hated castor oil and getting her feet wet but loved school and getting new clothes in the fall. She remembered her dad taking the children outside one night to hear a panther screaming and she never forgot it. Once a rattlesnake crawled under the house into a tight narrow space, grandad had mom to hold a mirror, he sighted the snake in the mirror and killed it with one shot. Advice from her dad was "play after the work is done, have dinner on time, help your mother and behave yourself". He gave all the daughters a nickname and called mom "Missy" then later "Midge". My aunts having two names has been very confusing at times. She remembered how proud her dad was when a new baby was born and helped to select the name, how glad he was when work was finished in the fall and looked forward to spring. He always regretted that he couldn't do more for his children.

Mildred recalled her mother was jolly and loved her family and neighbors. She made all her children's clothes by hand in the early days. Her mother's advice to her was "honesty is the best policy, love your brothers and sisters and be true to yourself". In early days her parents rode the horses to church and rode out regularly to check on the cattle and sheep. They participated in church and school events and her mother cooked big dinners for the hired hands during the hay harvest.

Mildred has blue eyes, brown hair and was a pretty seventeen year old girl when she met Bert Aliff. His brother Earl had invited her to take a ride in his brother's new car. They were barely out on the road when they were stopped and ordered out of the car. Bert then drove his car back home. Mom decided that Bert was the best looking and he owned the car. Sometime later they happened to meet at the Whitby post office. He told me that she was very pretty and had long curly hair. He met her family and was allowed to take her to the Beckley movie if they took her little brother Bill along. Bill earned a quarter for looking out the window occasionally. The romance progressed and they were married December 20, 1928, her birthday. She wore her wedding ring for sixty one years without removing it once.

Bert Aliff was loved and respected by all her brothers and sisters, grandmother said.
he was the same as any of her sons. He always took the little ones candy on Sunday and helped the others when they needed him.

Bert came from old Monroe and Raleigh County pioneer families. His mother was Dema Wiseman, daughter of James and Amanda Wiseman, James being the son of Robert and Margaret-Wykle Wiseman. Robert Caden Wiseman was a circuit preacher at the old Rehobeth Church at Union and his parents were Owen and Jane Ramsey-Wiseman. Owen's parents were Joseph and Elizabeth-Bateman Wiseman. Joseph was a soldier of the American Revolution.

Bert's grandmother Amanda Wiseman was a daughter of Henry Taylor and Nancy Wykle-Wiseman. Henry's parents were Isaac and Margaret Jane Ramsey Wiseman. The Wiseman families lived in Monroe County, near Wiseman's mountain, some lived on Dropping Lick Creek off Indian Creek. Those first Wiseman and Halstead pioneer families knew each other, married into some of the same Indian Creek families and did some business together. Many of the Wiseman's moved later to Ohio, including my grandparents.

When I was young we visited grandmother, great grandmother Amanda and others in Ohio. Amanda was about one hundred years old at the time. She wore long dresses, women's boots, old fashioned bonnets was alert and getting around pretty good. She told me she was seventeen when Mr. Lincoln was shot and her family didn't hear of it for three days. She was living in Monroe County at that time. During our visit her daughter Dema (grandma) had bought a new electric refrigerator and Amanda was bewildered at "how that thing could make ice cubes". Amanda lived to nearly one hundred and three. Amanda, James and Dema are buried in the Scioto cemetery, Ohio.

Bert's father was John Newton Aliff, who descended from the Roanoke Aliffs. His parents were Callahil and Amanda Cantley-Aliff of Henry B. and Mary Aliff. Amanda Cantley was the daughter of George Washington and Drusilla Clay-Cantley. Drusilla Clay was the granddaughter of Mitchell Clay, Jr., whose parents and family were attacked by Shawnee Indians, most were murdered and are mentioned in the history books.

Bert and Mildred started married life at Jon Ben and lived next door to his parents. He was a miner for a short time and soon became the lamp-house keeper at Mead, eventually working for the National Mine Service Company for many years until he retired. During the depression he worked for fifty cents a day. I was born at Jon Ben. My brother Jim and I were the only children and we grew up mostly at 111 Grove Avenue, Beckley. Dad was a big tease and told us that when he married mom she had bloomers made from feed sacks that had Pillsbury's best printed on the seat. He said grandad promised all the sons-in-law a cow after they were married, and none ever got one.

Eventually my parents moved to Mabscott. Mom enjoyed working during the elections, first in Beckley then at Mabscott, all together for fifty years. She has always had a garden in the backyard and sometimes cans nearly two hundred jars of vegetables, giving most of it to her family and friends. Her yard is always filled with flowers blooming continuously from spring to fall. During the winter months
she makes beautiful afghans and everyone in the family has one. She enjoys the
senior citizen lunches and activities, going to church and having the family come to
visit. She is a wonderful cook and makes the best dumplings, biscuits and desserts.

Midge and Bert enjoyed many winters in Florida spoiling their five grandchildren and
the activities in Florida. They belonged to the Antique Car Club in Beckley and
attended all the events in their Model A. Ford. Dad started taking 8mm movies
in 1939 of nearly everyone in the large family of Charles Halstead and invented a
mine lamp charger, the BCA-1 which he sold to the National Mine Service Company.
After retirement he continued to make chargers in his workshop and sold hundreds.
Mom sewed many pretty dresses for the four granddaughters through their young
years just as she had done for me and enjoys keeping busy.

Bert had dark red hair when he had some and green eyes. He was a small man,
mild mannered and good natured who never had a cross word with anyone. However,
mom recently told me that when Dad was in his late seventies he and a younger man
had a disagreement over a parking space. The other man instigated a fight and Dad
said "come on" and drew the blade from his pocket knife ready for the fight. The
two alarmed wives talked them out of it.

My parents have had a good life and Dad lived to age eighty one. He had two major
heart attacks in his middle years, slowed down and took care of himself. He died
of cancer March 15, 1989. He was born at Eccles, January 14, 1908. He is buried
in a mausoleum at Blueridge Memorial Gardens, Beckley. Mother is eighty seven and
keeps busy and in fairly good health at this time. She has enjoyed going to old
cemeteries with us to look for our ancestors and likes meeting our new found
cousins.

3-1 Dee (Delma) Ann Aliff, born October 7, 1929 at Jon Ben, WV. That year
J. Edgar Hoover was President. The stock market crashed on October the 20th
beginning the great depression and Byrd flew over the South Pole.

I went to Killarney grade school at Mead, finishing at Central grade school
at Beckley, graduating from Woodrow Wilson High School in 1948. I worked
after school at the Beckley theater for three years after school until I graduated,
worked in Charleston for the State Police Department in the State House for
six years and attending Capitol City Business College at night. I also took
night course at McHenry Models and worked weekends on modeling jobs
to supplement my income at the State Police Department. I made more money
on one job than a whole month's salary at the State House and continued
both careers for about four years until I got married.

I married my brother's best friend-William Larimore, August 2, 1954, son of
William and Nellie Larimore of Beckley. We moved to San Antonio, Texas
where Dick was stationed on active duty and I worked in the G-1 Section at
Fourth Army Headquarters. Our first daughter Anita was born at Brooke Army
Medical Center. After a three year tour we returned to Beckley. Divorced in
1957, remarried January 4, 1960, our second daughter Carmen was born in
1962. We raised our daughters in West Palm Beach, Florida and moved to
Columbus, Georgia as Dick was stationed at Ft. Benning. We divorced in
1976 and each of us has remarried. My daughters have made my life happy
and complete and I have three wonderful grandchildren.
I remarried to James Wheaton May 1981, West Palm Beach. Jim is retired Army, Lt. Col. West Point. We enjoy our children and grandchildren and our trips to WV. We are happy and I have loved the adventure of finding my ancestors which was very rewarding in many ways.

1-1 Anita Diane Larimore was born August 12, 1956, San Antonio, TX. A Columbus High graduate, class of 1974. Columbus State University, Degree in Dental Hygiene. Employed at Ft. Benning Dental Clinic. Married James Jackson 12-19-1980. They have one son and live in Columbus. Anita and her son each have recovered from cancer.

1-1 James Kyle Jackson, born 3-10-1990. Is in third grade and in remission from leukemia and four years of chemotherapy. Kyle has eleven belts in karate and is interested in his computer, microscope and his dog Rusty. He likes to take pictures and help his grandmother.

1-2 Carmen Dee Larimore was born 3-31-1962 at Good Samaritan Hospital, West Palm Beach. She attended schools in Columbus and High School at Palm Beach Gardens, FL. She danced professionally for about three years then worked for the Better Business Bureau in West Palm Beach for eleven years, becoming Office Manager. She married Ray Parish 12-29-1979 and they had one son. They divorced and she remarried to Rick Cockerham 2-15-1987 and are parents to one daughter and live in West Palm Beach, FL.

2-1 Richard Adam Parish, born 5-22-1908 at West Palm Beach. Schooled in Florida, graduated 1999. Adam won thirty trophies in dirt bike racing and loves skate boarding. He is a talented sketch artist and currently lives and works with his father in Georgia.

2-2 Shanna Elizabeth Cockerham, born 8-8-89. She goes to grade school in Florida. Takes lessons in ballet and riding. Shanna has danced in the Nutcracker for the Palm Beach Ballet Co. for the past three years and attends P B County’s School of the Arts. Shanna wrote her biography which follows: “I am Shanna Cockerham. I live in Florida and take riding lessons and I am jumping my cavaleties. The horse's name I ride is Rose. I have ballet too. My two best friends are Victoria and Sarah. I've been in ballet for six years and I'm very good at arabesque. I am eight years old and have been in the Nutcracker for three years. I go to Belvedere Elementary. I have one brother named Adam. He's seventeen. I did have five rabbits once but dogs came and ripped the bottom of the cages. The rabbit that was my favorite lived. My mom's name is Carmen and my dad's name is Rick. My best friend is Michelle. Well, that's all about my life."
3-2 James H. Aliff was born December 15, 1934 at Mead, WV. I was about four years old and the night he was born my dad took me to the home of an elderly black couple and left me there. After he left they sat me in the middle of their kitchen table and were friendly. It was the first black people I had ever seen, I wasn't afraid.

My little brother was adorable with blonde curls. I took care of him until he could tie his shoes and button his buttons. Jim went to schools in Beckley and graduated from Woodrow Wilson High School.

After graduating from High School he joined the U. S. Navy and served aboard the lightcruiser USS Roanoke, flagship of Rear Admiral Richard P. Glass, the Commander of Cruiser Division Two of the U.S. Sixth Fleet in the Mediterranean. After his four year tour he attended photography schools and became a professional photographer. He was employed by Pratt and Whitney Aircraft in Florida in a supervisory position until retirement and owned his own business for a while.

After his tour in the Navy, Jim married Ann Wise of Glen Jean, WV. Ann is the daughter of Anthony and Anna Wise. They raised their three children in Florida and lived at Jupiter, FL. After retirement he and Ann moved to Highlands, NC. While in Florida Jim owned and restored many antique cars, selling some in Palm Beach. Ann has been his helpmate through their years and is a beloved sister in law. We enjoyed raising our children together in Florida. We lived close and the cousins have always enjoyed being together and are good friends. Jim and Ann are parents of three children.

2-1 Trina Lynn, born 10-6-1958, Beckley, WV. She is a Registered Nurse, works at Wellington Hospital in West Palm Beach.


   2-1 Alaina, born 12-18-1992, Denton, Texas.


   3-1 Bert, III, born 9-30-1990.

Bert and Susan live and work at Port St. Lucie, Florida.

This concludes the family of Mildred Halstead-Aliff.
Mildred Halstead-Aliff and husband Bert Aliff, Son James Aliff and his wife Ann Wise-Aliff

Trina Lynn Aliff
Daughter of Jim and Ann Aliff

Alexis and Bert Aliff III
Alaina Hagen

Grandchildren of Jim and Ann
Dee A. Aliff-Larimore-Wheaton, daughter of Mildred Halstead and Bert Aliff, Dick Larimore

Below: Daughters of Dee and Dick Larimore
Anita Larimore Jackson and Carmen Larimore Parish-Cockerham. Carmen's son Adam Parish
My daughters and grandchildren

Anita and Carmen

Shanna Cockerham
Carmen's daughter

Kyle Jackson
Anita's son

Adam Parish
Carmen's son
William Edward was the fourth child, born May 5, 1913. Woodrow Wilson was President. That year Dr. Schweitzer started a hospital to treat leprosy and sleeping sickness and the following year gold was found in Alaska.

Bill was named for his grandpa and was grandpa's favorite. He was a very spirited youngster and someone had to hold him still for pictures. He was born and grew up in the old log house at Bowyer. He had a special place to sleep in the loft near a warm chimney.

Midge remembered Bill at age three after church baptising the poker. He leaned it over repeating all the words of baptism which amused the adults who enjoyed his play acting. Bill was always ambitious and at a young age gathered eggs to sell on the way to school for pocket money. Often, he went with his grandpa Halstead to sell vegetables at Jon Ben and Whitby. Recently he told me of a trip he made with Cal Lilly to sell a wagon load of strawberries and they were stopped and robbed on the way home by a man with a gun and handkerchief over his face. Afterwards, Cal said "he got us didn't he Billy"? They knew who the robber was but didn't pursue the matter further.

Bill worked hard and played hard, his sisters thought he was handsome and good natured. He was well liked by the gals and the guys and loved to tease and play tricks on the young ones.

Carpentry became his profession and he became a contractor, he built many houses and buildings in Raleigh and Summers Counties and was one of the supervisors in building the Hinton Dam. Bill was always drawn to the lovely farming areas of Summers and Monroe Counties unaware that he lived near the area of our first ancestor James who settled on Indian Creek in 1785 or before.

He married Elizabeth Josephine Moodesphaugh February 24, 1944. They went into the dairy farming business and built a lovely house on their farm at Lowell. (Just across the Greenbrier River from the old Graham house). They owned and operated the Greener Acres dairy farm for thirty two years. Besides milk they made ice cream, eggnog, cheese, and chocolate milk. Jo worked along with Bill at the dairy, keeping books and volunteer work for Blue Cross. In addition she raised a family and garden.

They have always had an interest in their community and Bill is a long time member of the Farm Bureau and Roitan Club and was instrumental in getting the John Henry monument made and put up at Talcott and he built the stone foundation for it. Bill and Jo along with their daughter Barbara and the Hinton Preservation Society bought the old Graham house at the court house door. Bill cleaned, landscaped the property and built a front porch for it. At the age of nearly eighty he built an additional log building in back for storage and supplies and was disappointed that the logs were one third of an inch off on one side at the top. He and a few volunteers have just finished a one room school house on the property, 1997. The Graham house can be seen in the little community of Lowell on WV State Route 3. The hewed logs were squared with a broad axe and the huge chimneys were a feat in themselves to construct. The port hole where Colonel Graham fired at the Indians can be seen upstairs.

The Halstead farm is lovely and the family enjoys visiting, my children loved seeing the cows, barns and shiney stainless steel milkers and all of us enjoy Jo's delicious dinners. They worked hard and prospered until retirement. Are parents of two children.

1-1 Crystal Lynn, born 10-13-1967, Ronceverte, WV.
1-3 Hilarie, born 3-17-1980, Ronceverte.


   1-1 Mitchell Turner, born 3-4-1995.

3-5 Nora B. was born March 17, 1915. She died June 17, 1987 of heart failure. Nora was the best loved of all and the most unlucky one. She was the most fun, cared more for others than herself and worked hard most of her life. She adored her children and grandchildren. Her sisters say that she was their rock who gave much love to every one of them, was tolerant, non judgemental, was respected by her family and friends and was a real joy to our family. 

As a little girl she was accident prone, her dress caught fire at the fireplace and she was burned badly and at three she fell off the bed and bumped her head. Mom said it was about two years before her eyes got straight and she had to wear glasses. While sleigh riding she accidently knocked out two front teeth.

Nora was good to me and loved me and my children. I was so happy as a youngster when she visited at our house. She was so much fun and I cried when she left. Early one morning she tap danced down our stairs singing loudly, making lots of noise which was unusual at our house and it tickled me and my little brother. After I left home and worked in Charleston, Nora was the first one I visited after I got to my parents and couldn't wait to see her.

While visiting her once one of the youngsters put a little snake on her head and it crawled around in her hair, poking its head out above her nose and she kept on talking and reached up and pulled it out then handed it back.

Nora was employed most of her life at Kroger store in Beckley and took care of grandmother after grandad died. She married James Pegram when she was young, and the marriage didn't last. She married Russell Atkins, a widower. Being a single parent and working was difficult and Nora let her parents raise her daughter and son while she provided for all their needs and saw them every week. They grew up happy, well cared for, loved and educated.

Nora suffered with heart failure for several years. Russell died six months after Nora. They are buried in a mausoleum at Blueridge Memorial Gardens, Beckley.

5-1 Cordia "Criss" was born July 16, 1934 and grew up on the farm, had two mom's and was like a sister to her young aunts and me. She was a shy, blonde, blue eyed, dainty little girl who never got dirty. Grandmother once sent Criss and me to Cal Lilly's place to deliver a message about the church association and we set out on old Bill to ride up Lilly mountain when suddenly the horse became scared of a snake and reared up. Both of us slid off and hit the ground. We were small and had a very hard time getting back up on the horse with nothing to stand on. We managed and delivered the message.

Criss graduated from Trap Hill High School and was the lovely senior Queen. She became a Registered Nurse. While grandmother was in the nursing home, Criss took a job there to look after her until the end and was with her mother when she passed away.
My brother came home on furlough and took Criss and me out on the town, we picked up a friend of his to go along and the friend eventually became my husband.

Criss married Charles Shrader December 21, 1955. They adopted three babies and had one born to them. Charles died young of cancer. Criss works and lives in Beckley, is slim, pretty and looks young. A devoted mother and grandmother.


   1-1 Jason Clay Holdren.
   1-2 Steven L. Holdren.
   1-3 Caitlyn Shrader, born 6-8-1988.


   2-1 Sarah Elizabeth, born 2-19-1999.

1-3 Cristi, born 5-6-1979, Atlanta. Married Scott Buswell 6-1996.


   4-1 Cara Nicole, born 6-7-1994.

5-2 James "Jerry" Pegram was born June 28, 1939 at Jon Ben, WV. He was raised on the farm and was the baby that we all adored. He was a cute little boy with big eyes, very quiet and carried his cat around in his mother's old purse. He was grandad's shadow and followed him everywhere. He was a happy little boy. He was a wonderful son, good to his mother, is a loving husband, proud father and grandfather. He always loved outdoor activities, hunting and fishing. He took grandad fishing at New River near Indian Creek once and grandad told him that his people came from around there.

James graduated from Trap Hill High School and married his high school sweetheart. He worked for thirty eight years in construction and maintenance in the coal industry, retiring from Consolidated Coal Co., Inc., as Superintendent of surface mining. He married Lillie Blaylock September 12, 1959, daughter of Samuel and Laura Clay-Blaylock. He and Lillie live an active retired life. James is a Harley-Davidson enthusiast. Parents of two.

1-1 Laura Elizabeth Pegram, born 2-13-1992, Morgantown.


2-1 Emily Dawn Ash, born 7-29-1990.
2-2 Justin William Morey, born 6-8-1998.

This concludes the family of Nora Halstead-Atkins.
Blanche B. was born November 20, 1916 in the old house at Bowyer. As a youngster she was hospitalized with an abscessed lung and nearly died. She was frail for many years and claims that she was the runt of the family. Being shielded from too much hard work made the others treat her as if she was spoiled.

She was afraid of cows and the dark, didn't like milking and got into trouble when she didn't help with the dishes. She and her sister Edna teamed up against their brother Paul as youngsters. Her favorite times were picnicking, roaming in the woods looking for wildflowers and bird nests. She loved times when the family all came for dinner and visited. Blanche remembered traveling to Camp Creek to visit grandpa Lilly in a horse drawn wagon and she wore a red straw hat.

She remembered their home as happy and comfortable and they had lots of visitors. Their friends were always welcome to spend the nights. She said her parents were like lovers when she was young and her mother never complained about things she didn't have and never wanted any conflict between her children.

Her dad was happy when the kids were around to help him with the chores. He was strict with the boys and they were scared of him when they were dating girls. The Halstead grandparents lived in sight but the children were not allowed to visit too much. She remembered watching grandma cook and her kitchen smelled so good and said grandpa grieved for grandma and died a short time after she passed away.

Her sisters remember how frail she was and said she was a good daughter, thoughtful sister who speaks her mind and is beautiful. Grandad called her "Booker". Her home is lovely and she has exquisite taste in everything. She was a good student and graduated from Stoco High School in 1938. She said she felt homely and unimportant. (She was and is very pretty, even in her advanced years)

Booker made a pretty blue satin evening gown for her high school prom which was handed down to three other sisters who wore it to proms and other special occasions. She is an excellent seamstress and her hand made quilts are prize winners, we are all proud to own one. She made her sister Anne's graduation dress and some pretty outfits for me when I was in high school. I always hoped that I would grow up to be and look like her and aunt Edith.

Booker married John Martin August 12, 1939 at Pearisburg, VA. John was born October 12, 1916. He worked for National Mine Service Company. John and my dad were good friends and enjoyed helping each other on projects and went out for breakfast on Saturday mornings, sometimes. John and Booker had no children but shared in the love and raising of her sister Anne's daughter Beth. They went to dances and sometimes took us younger girls along and John never complained when we stepped on his feet learning to dance.

John was there every day for me and mother during dad's last days and hurt deeply at his death and said he had lost a brother. John died suddenly four months later. He is buried at Sunset Memorial Gardens in Beckley. After dad died and before I returned home to Columbus aunt Booker packed a set of dishes she had given to me, and later when I unpacked the dishes I found sweet and consoling messages she had written in the plates with a felt tip pen. It meant so much and now ten years later I haven't washed them.
Booker keeps busy with her yard and flowers and makes quilts involving thousands of hand stitches during the winter months. She and her widowed sisters live close and see each other every week and are there for one another. They shop, go to church and enjoy family that come often to see them.

3-7 Edna Elizabeth was born January 5, 1918. During that year the World War I Armistice ended the war which Americans had joined the year previously and one out of ten Americans had a telephone.

Edna said she preferred kitchen duties as a youngster, she cleaned house, took care of milking and tried to stay away from the crying babies, got into trouble for talking back and not getting her chores done on time.

She remembered her dad as quick tempered, impatient, hard working, cool headed in emergencies and a crack shot who feared no man or beast. He never interferred when punishment was dished out, was happy when he had good crops and enough money to fill his obligations. Advice from her mother was "work hard and do better, don't ask questions and my word is law".

Like the others she loved the outdoors, walking in the woods, holidays and the fourth of July. She loved her grandmother Jane whom she felt close to who listened to her troubles, she was deeply saddened at her death.

Edna claims bouts of depression and says "she forgives but never forgets, is tenacious, outspoken, visionary, analytical, independent, generous to a fault, doesn't believe in a hereafter and loves her brothers and sisters".

Her sisters said she gave them clothes when they were in school, likes the better things in life, is a perfectionist, good seamstress, determined to do whatever she sets out to do, has a definite style of her own, enjoys and likes to have friends.

She was a secretary in the Liquor Commission at the State House for many years. After I graduated she let me stay with her and helped me to get a job at the State House, for which I was grateful. When we walked down the street in Beckley I noticed people who turned to look at her because she was so attractive, confident and wore pretty clothes. She loaned me a lovely gown for my high school prom.

Edna married Graydon M. Nowlan, February 12, 1948, at Asbury Methodist Church, Charleston, WV. Son of J. C. Nowlan of Alderson, born August 21, 1904. Graydon was in the Merchant Marines when young. His profession was the oil and gas business. They lived in South Charleston and Logan. Graydon died at Logan, October 10, 1985. Edna lives near her son in Charleston.

7-1 Timothy Patrick Nowlan, born May 31, 1952. Lives at Charleston.
3-8 Paul K. was born October 13, 1919. Woodrow Wilson was President. The British split the atom and dial telephones were being used in Norfolk, VA.

Paul married Maxine Ellison, December 22, 1939 in Giles County, VA. She was the daughter of Frank and Hattie Ellison of Mercer County, born February 18, 1922. Maxine descends from the Ellison pioneers, early settlers and Indian fighters who settled at Pipestem and Indian Creek. The Halstead's and Ellison's were neighbors and friends as early as 1786 or before. James Ellison mentions his daughter "Nancy Halstead" in his will dated February 1839. I was unable to determine who Nancy was. Perhaps she was a wife to one of James' grandsons, or a widowed wife. Three sons of James each named one of their daughters Nancy.

Paul attended the Whitby School and worked for a short time in the mines but liked farming and the cattle business. He lived near his parents and helped his dad with farming and other things until Grandad died. Paul and Maxine lived first in a house that he built on the site of Alexander's first log home which had been torn down, near his parents on Bowyer Creek. They were parents to three girls. Two of the little girls had polio. One survived with no ill effects but Treva was very ill and survived after three months in an iron lung. She was unable to walk so her sisters took care of her and took her everywhere with them—vacations, theaters, bowling, restaurants, and carrying her when necessary. Treva was a loving, thoughtful girl who showed concern for others and was intelligent and pretty like the others.

Paul and grandad each bought adjoining farms at Glen Daniels which was more convenient and closer to schools. They lived there until Grandad died and Lake Stevens Park was built. Paul is retired but still somewhat interested in the cattle business. He is his own veterinarian and likes gardening. His sisters say that he is loyal, very private, jolly, never complains and is a strong person who wears his heartaches well and takes care of his family. He always loved to tease the younger ones having them in tears at times. Anne recalled that he yanked down her bloomers once and made her cry and would scare Charles every chance he got. He loved the little ones and catered to the youngest and let my little brother find three of the Easter baskets one Easter.

Paul was a big help with the family history and helped us find the old cemeteries. He told us some funny and some not so funny stories about our kin. He made our trips fun and enjoyable. He is good hearted and and is there for those who need him. He gladly flew to Georgia with me to get my car when my dad was sick and I was grateful and we enjoyed the trip.

Maxine passed away June 10, 1986, of cancer. She and Treva are buried at Sunset Memorial Gardens, Beckley. Paul enjoys his family, the grandchildren and great grandchildren who live near him at Daniels, WV.

8-2 Sandra Marlene, born 1-7-1943. Married Gilbert Worrell 10-7-1961. Son of Emmett and Virginia Worrell of Camp Creek.

2-1 Greg Worrell, born 6-25-1963. Married Dena?

1-1 Stephanie Worrell, born 12-31-1987.


3-1 Jamie Paulette, born 2-9-1963. Married Ronald Quesenberry 11-4-1983.

1-1 Heather Lee Quesenberry, born 2-26-1990.

Betty works in Beckley. She baby sat for a friend's six month old baby named Tony Suptic, whose parents divorced and gave the child to Betty. She raised him as her son. He recently finished college and works in Beckley.

3-2 Tony Suptic.
3-9 Edith D. was born May 21, 1921. Warren Harding was President. That year Philo
Farnsworth created images using electrons—television, the Canadians found insulin
as a treatment for diabetes and Howard Carter opens the tomb of Tutankhamun.

Edith had blonde hair and was called "Cotten" later called "Bunny". She graduated
from Stoco High School and was one of the prettiest of the daughters. She and her
sister Rubye were close in age and best pals. Mom says she was the pet, had a
good disposition and good friend to everyone. She has the gift of reaching everyone
at their own level.

Aunt Bunny said her mom taught them to be decent people and she once got a
switching for running from her mother. She thought herself to be stubborn. She
recalled her mother reading her bible and that she always tried to look her best. She
remembered that grandpa Lilly was well educated and her mom said that he was the
best man she had ever known.

We younger girls adored Bunny and wanted to grow up and look like her. I remember
when she was about eighteen and was asked to participate in an upcoming beauty
contest in Raleigh County. She was shy and reluctantly agreed after some persuading
from my mother and others. She borrowed mom's best dress and bathing suit and
was just beautiful and among the final winners. I was allowed to go and was so proud.

She taught me how to tell time in two simple sentences, "the small hand is the hour,
the big hand points to minutes before the hour or after the hour". What was so
difficult became suddenly clear. She was very kind to me, gave good advice and did
a million favors for me as I grew up and I adored her two little boys. She says that
God has touched her life and she gives thanks to Him for all things worthwhile.

Her parents wished her well when she married and never interfered. She married
Roger Merrill Lilly April 21, 1941 in Bristol, Tennessee. Roger was the son of Cleve
and Callie Sullivan Lilly of Beaver. Roger was born February 16-1916 at Beaver and
graduated from Shady Springs High School. Roger told me that while working in his
dad's store at Beaver the two Halstead girls Edna and Edith came in and he "just
could not forget that little Halstead girl".

Roger enlisted in the army in WW II and had three brothers who enlisted. All
survived the war. He took part in the Kiska invasion and participated in the battles
in England, France, Belgium and Luxembourg. He was captured in the Battle of the
Bulge and was reported missing for several months. They were liberated by the Sixth
Armoured Division of the Third U. S. Army who over-ran a stalag near Ziegnian.
Roger came home very thin, to his wife and baby that he had not seen. Years later
he told us of some war experiences and laughed when telling us how they made him
crawl out of the hole to wave the white flag of surrender to the Germans and told
him the Germans wouldn't shoot him because he wore the medic arm band.

Everyone worried all those months that he was missing and dad would listen to
news about the war on the radio and they talked about the guerilla's, I asked dad where they were getting all those gorilla's and he just said "from the zoo".

Roger and Edith were active in the church and attended some of the old Primitive Baptist churches attended by our ancestors. Roger was an Elder in his church. He was the best and kindest man I ever knew besides dad. He and Edith worked in a local grocery store in Beckley until they retired. Aunt Bunny is a wonderful cook and her home is lovely, pleasant and comfortable. They have lots of visitors. Roger was dearly loved by all in our family. He suffered with heart problems for several years and died November 15, 1996. He was buried at Sunset Memorial Gardens, Beckley. Edith stays busy with family, friends, church and yard work. Parents of two sons.

9-1 Mason Richard Lilly was born December 12, 1944, during a deep snowstorm at the Raleigh General Hospital. He graduated from Woodrow Wilson High School. Married Lelia Bryant in 1962, and were divorced. Mason is in the insurance business at Beckley.

1-1 Henry Lilly, born 11-16-1968. Married Melinda Snuffer 9-16-1996. The ceremony was performed by his grandfather Roger Lilly.


Rubye Alice was born January 19, 1924. Calvin Coolidge was President and cellophane was invented that year.

Rubye was the most outgoing of them all, never met a stranger and she was like my big sister. Her sisters remember her as everyone's friend, happy go lucky, funny, good hearted and generous. She loved traveling and dancing. She would pick berries every summer to earn money to go to 4-H Camp and usually got stung somewhere in her face and she went off to camp with her eyes swelled shut more than once. She would promise the little one's a Yankee dime to help her which turned out to be a kiss.

Rubye made fun out of her jobs and was quick to get her work done. She invented rap while she churned milk long before anyone ever heard of it. She told us ghost stories at bedtime and scratched our backs. One morning I went out with her to do the milking and as I stood there half asleep, shivering and yawning she squirted milk in my face and mouth. She laughed big and then wiped me off. Once while walking to school she was wearing a rubber raincoat which she discarded soon as the rain stopped and she rolled it up and hid it under a big rock. After school we turned over nearly fifty rocks and never found the raincoat. When she went shopping with mother she encouraged her to buy things for me.

Rubye married Jim Matejovsky, a Navy Ensign in 1945 and they lived in San Diego, California. They divorced and she raised her two children by herself. Later she remarried to Dave Crooks and they lived in Oxford, PA. They traveled often and visited her daughter in New York and her son and his family in Dijon, France. They liked bowling and square dancing.

Rubye became ill and died March 8, 1994, with cancer. When my husband and I went to see her the week before, she pretended to be well and showed us her books, visited and ate pizza with us. She was jolly and courageous to the end. Her daughter and son brought their mother's ashes back to West Virginia and placed them in the old Lilly cemetery at Camp Creek as she wished them to do.

Patricia Ann Matejovsky was born January 6, 1949 in San Diego, CA. She married Sam Di Filippo December 2, 1967 and divorced in 1969. She lives in New York and works for a stock trader on Wall Street. She is a personal assistant. Her job is to take care of her employer's life, pay his bills, hired help, run errands, walks the dog and is not overworked nor underpaid. She vacations in Florida several times a year and also visits her brother and his family and often goes to West Virginia to see her kin folks. Pam loves New York, has many friends who have become her family. She is a great guide and loves to show New York to visitors. Once found a young girl who was lost at the New York railway station who had no money. She took her home for the night and the next day bought her a ticket and put her on the train for home. She enjoys her cat, chatting on line with friends in cyberspace and likes being single.
10-2 Steven Alfred Matejovsky was born July 2, 1950, Norfolk, VA. He married Anita Rundotter, September 14, 1981 on the Island of Gibraltar. Anita was born October 9, 1944 in Sweden. She was a widow with three children. They have no children together, her children are his children and he adopted the girls. Anita is a Swedish Diplomat and they live wherever she is posted. They have a home in the wine region in the south of France where they spend vacations. Steve is fluent in six languages besides English; French, Spanish, Swedish, Arabic, Swahili and Hausa and has lived in Africa, Mexico and traveled extensively in Europe. He works as a consultant for various enterprises and most often teaches languages or sociology at the university level. He is a gourmet cook-Chinese, French, Indian and Moroccan.

The above information came from his sister Pam who thinks Steve is brilliant and he would never mention anything about himself.

2-1 Mike Rundotter
2-2 Mimi Matejovsky
2-3 Sophia Matejovsky
3-11 Virgie Anne Halstead was born July 25, 1928. That year a Greek-American physician Papanicolaou developed a screening test for cervical and uterine cancer and a Scottish bacteriologist Alexander Fleming discovered penicillin.

Anne is independent, funny and set in her ways. She says her life is an open book. She has worked nearly every day since she was eighteen and usually stays with a business until it ceases. After graduating from Stoco High School she married Jess Halsey August 31, 1949. They divorced and have one daughter.

Anne said she got in trouble as a youngster for fighting with her siblings and for talking back to her parents and claims that grandad once slapped her over into the slop bucket. She preferred working in the house rather than out in the gardens. She cooked Sunday dinner and had to have it ready on time. Many Sundays friends came after church for dinner and the table was reset two or three times and we young ones took our dinner out on the front porch or ate out on one of the big rocks. We washed more dishes than little orphan Annie. Anne looked forward to weekends when we could play house on the big rocks and she liked lying on the hay with her friends eating sweet apples. When she was a youngster she always had a little stash of trinkets and treasures hidden away, once cried so hard because she lost her "pokobo"s and it was finally understood that she couldn't find her "poke of bows. Her sisters said she liked paper dolls and marbles and "is orderly, honest, likes nice clothes, always has the last word in an argument and is loved by the family."

Anne said her parents played games with them on rainy days in the house, like hide and seek, blind man's bluff, and who's got the button. Their teachers often came to visit and would spend the night. Lots of friends and young people came to the farm for visits. Sometimes they were allowed to take a younger sister or brother to school for a day near the last month of school.

Anne has always worked, seldom ever missing a day. She saved her money and bought a house for herself and daughter.

11-1 Sarah Beth was born August 26, 1950. She graduated from West Virginia University. Married Anthony Angotti, May 21, 1971. She is divorced, lives and works in Charlotte.

1-1 Andrew Angotti, born 12-13-1978. Attends Auburn University in Alabama.
Charles Henry was born October 20, 1930 in the house built by grandpa William at Bowyer. That year Robert Goddard developed a supersonic multistage rocket at Roswell, New Mexico. The planet Pluto was discovered and polystyrene was invented.

Charles was a happy go lucky, mischevious, adventurous, good looking daredevil who was always smiling. He had many friends and was well liked. He was tough as nails and went sleigh riding with no shirt or shoes and paid no attention to his raw bleeding skin. He was usually in trouble for not having wood cut before dark and sometimes couldn't get out of bed before daylight until grandad threw his big boot into the bedroom.

Charles loved riding the horses, sometimes racing the most spirited one and he loved to fight and once beat me up when he had to help me hoe my row of corn. He was like a brother and we had lots of fun when he came home on furlough from the Marines. He knew everyone in Beckley and was especially nice to the downtrodden and hugged the homely girls and waitresses and called them all honey. He loved and played with the littlest ones, his nephew Phillip adored him and was so proud of the little scar that Charles carved on his arm that matched his own.

After graduating from Trap Hill he joined the Marine Corp. While he was in Korea he was in the toughest battles and some of his buddies froze to death or were killed around him. He was a platoon mortarmen. He married Hester Reed and they had a son that he loved dearly. After Korea he became a Marine Recruiter for a while eventually getting out of service and not being satisfied with civilian life he enlisted in the U. S. Air Force.

Charles was killed in a car accident, his two friends survived with serious injuries. We were heartbroken and I felt as if I had lost a brother. A few months before the accident I remember him saying "if I die tomorrow, I can't say that I haven't lived". He was buried in Sunset Memorial Gardens, Beckley. A military service was conducted by the 783rd AC and W Air Squadron, Guthrie Air Force, from Charleston, WV. For many years now when our family puts flowers on graves of our family on Memorial Day they find flowers already placed at Charles grave a few days earlier by an unknown person.

12-1 Charles Halstead, III, lives at Roanoke, Va.
3-13 Lois Vera, born June 18, 1932 at Bowyer. Herbert Hoover was the President and Americans were struggling through the great depression. During that year Albert Einstein arrived in America as a refugee.

Lois was a quiet, sleepy little girl who secretly wished to be a poet. I never heard her parents reprimand her and she just did what was expected of her. She says she had a happy childhood, was good natured and hated going outside to the privy in winter. She loved Christmas and week-end visitors. She remembers her mother telling her that she never got over the death of her child no matter how many other children she had.

Lois and I were best buddies and we had a favorite big rock to play on. It was covered on one end with soft green moss and had a round hole on it the size of a nickel with a perfect H raised up in the hole. We reckoned that God had marked this place with their initials especially for the family. She and I have laughed many times when remembering how grandmother jumped up and down that day when she was aggrivated with grandad for fussing at Charles. She recalled that her dad sometimes lost his temper but was happy when he had a little money and moonshine.

About 1937 during the depression I stayed at the farm for about a month and went to school at Whitby with my young aunts and uncle. My dad worked for fifty cents a day part of that time. None in our family were ever hungry because there was plenty of farm food. During those school mornings we scrambled to find everything and get dressed. (My shoe strings had so many knots tied in them, I barely had enough string for a bow and sometimes the soles were loose and flapped). We were all in different grades and met at noon to eat a lot of biscuit sandwiches that Anne had made for us early that morning. The two mile walk to school and back was tiresome. Lois knew how to dig a little spring in a place she knew where water would be and made paper cups and we quinched our thirst on the way home from school. Everyone still had jobs to do after school.

Lois and I picked wild strawberries in June and she made herself a birthday cake which she shared with all of us. One miserable hot job in the summer was picking blackberries and were allowed to quit after our bucket was full. Lois said a thick layer of leaves in the bottom of the bucket would make it full quicker. I stepped in a yellow jackets nest and got stung all over and never picked berries since.

After graduating from Trap Hill High School Lois came to Charleston to work for the telephone company. We went to movies, shopped and talked on the phone from our rented rooms about eight blocks apart. She met and married Bruce Caines, August 1, 1954 and were parents to three boys. Bruce died young on November 25th 1954 of brain cancer. He is buried in Tyler mountain cemetery. Lois raised her sons and never complained. When the boys were grown she married again to Carl Fawcett June 16, 1984. Carl was widowed with grown children. They traveled and enjoyed several years together until Carl died of cancer January 11, 1993.

The sisters say Lois is honest, loyal, likes antiques and never inflicted her heartaches on others. She looks out for her older sisters and is there if they need her. Lois is sweet, thoughtful, generous, attractive and has a beautiful home. We enjoy getting together with the others and talk about old times.

1-1 Lezlie
1-2 Lenzie


3-1 Margaret "Maggie" Halstead Caines, born May 1998.
Mary M. was born April 17, 1935, the last baby born to Charles and Cordia who was forty seven at the time. Mary was beautiful, healthy and smart. Franklin Roosevelt was the President. That year Edward VIII fell in love with Wally Simpson, the Richter scale was developed to measure earthquakes, radar and plexiglass was invented.

Mary’s older brothers and sisters were gone from home when she came along and she was the recipient of lots of attention. She was a sweet little girl whom everyone liked to spoil. I was six when she was born and remember my grandparents rocking her a lot. Grandad called her "Tige" and let her ride horsie on his big foot. As a youngster she was always smiling and kept up with us when we roamed through the woods and was very small when all of us jumped down from the barn loft when grandad was coming after us. Mary liked to play house on the big rocks.

Grandmother sent us to the Whitby post office once to pick up two boxes of twenty four chickens and told us not to go to Nora’s house. We went to see Nora anyway which was about a mile beyond the post office and carried the chickens. We enjoyed our visit with Nora and she was glad to see us. We vowed all the way home not to tell that we went to see Nora. Grandmother was waiting on the front porch for us and asked where we had been. Mary said "we didn't go to Nora's". Grandmother didn't fuss, I guess she knew where we were. Mary was very small and walked all that distance, about six miles in all.

Mary is a private person who doesn't get involved in other people's lives. Her sisters say that she has always worked hard, is very artistic, is a good mother, likes pretty clothes and is attractive and slim.

After Mary graduated from Trap Hill High School she married Herbert Lucas of Glen Daniels. Herbert died young, they had two children. She remarried to Doyle Rogers, a widower with a six month baby girl. Mary loved her from the beginning and raised her as her own baby. Mary is the proud mother of three outstanding children.

14-1 Vickie Lucas graduated from Woodrow Wilson High School in Beckley. Has a degree in Interior Design. Married to Al Haeffer and lives in Charlotte, NC. They have no children.

14-2 Eric Lucas, was born 3-12-1956. Graduated from Woodrow Wilson High School and enlisted in the U. S. Army. He was stationed in Germany for four years and married a German girl, Ulrike Newport. They had one son. They divorced and Eric eventually remarried Cindy Morgan of Ronceverte, WV.

2-2 Cordia Marie Lucas, born 10-8-1988, Ronceverte.


14-3 Tina Rogers, born 1-31-1968. Married to Jeff Perkins and lives in Florida.

This concludes the family of Charles and Cordia Halstead.

Cordia Marie Lucas, daughter of Eric and Cindy Lucas
Continuing now with the other children of William and Jane, of Alexander.

f-4 Dicie L., of William and Jane was born August 19, 1885. She died soon after her son was born. Dicie was very pretty. Mother remembers how her dad (Charles) and everyone in the family cried so when Dicie died. She is buried at Madam's Creek.

Dicie married Prass Pitzer, December 21, 1905. He remarried after she died to Etta Burleson. Prass died May 21, 1905.

4-1 Galina (Cochran) was born about 1907.


2-1 Clinton, (and Louise) of Gallipolis, Ohio.

2-1 (Mrs. Billy Tolbert) of Mt. Alto.

f-5 Goldie F. Halstead was born December 12, 1888. Goldie had blue eyes and dark hair. She loved gardening and her flowers. She canned vegetables from her garden and was an extremely good cook. Her family loved her lemon pies and biscuits.

Goldie was raised at the Whitby house and went to school in the one room school at the overflowing well. She was fun and good natured, had a great sense of humor and adored her family and grandchildren. She chased her grandchildren through the house with her fox fur and put her opened umbrella at the kitchen cabinets to keep her little granddaughter Kylette away from the pots and pans. Goldie loved to watch wrestling on the television.

Goldie married George Edwards July 1, 1912. He was born in Allegheny County. They were parents of four children. She worked at the Raleigh Laundry for many years at a starting salary of five cents an hour.

She died April 1977, and may be buried at Sunset Memorial in Beckley.
Edwards:

5-1 Georgia, born March 16, 1913, married Elzie Harris 1929. Married a second time to James A. Huffman.

1-1 Margaret Harris, born November 8, 1930, Beckley. Married James H. Pierce, 6-10-1950, Beckley.

1-1 James H. Pierce, Jr., born 5-7-1951. Divorced.

1-1 James H. Pierce, III.
1-2 Caseu Ryan Pierce.

1-2 Trina Gail, born April 29, 1958, married Steven Griffith.

2-1 Phillip Steven Griffith.


3-1 Andrea Gail Pierce.

1-2 James S. Huffman, Jr., born 11-10-1941, married Loretta Akers.

2-1 James Bryan Huffman.


5-3 Ava Clyde, born February 14, 1918. Married Kiley W. Lilly April 24, 1946.


1-1 Erin McRae Brown-Buckland, born April 1, 1974.


4-1 Daniel Boyd, born 1961.
4-2 David Charles, born 1962.
f-6 Sylvia Pine was born August 28, 1891. Married Grover C. Legg, December 31, 1910. Grover taught school at Whitby for a few years and Sylvia was a student. Sylvia is buried at Logan.

6-1 Emery, born about 1911.
6-2 Elvin, born about 1913.
6-3 Gwendolyn.

3-1 Zane.

I could not find any records about Sylvia or her sister Arabel.

f-7 Arabel was born August 29, 1895, at Whitby. Married Fred Howell February 24, 1919. They lived at Sullivan, WV.

7-1 Dwight
7-2 Dwayne

2-1 Norman

f-8 Landen was born May 11, 1903 and was the last child of William and Jane. He weighed fifteen pounds at birth. He grew up to be very tall and slim. He was a good looking man. His parents gave him a new car at age twenty one and when they died he left home. He married Margaret Dever McClung. Second wife's name is unknown. Landen lived his later years in Florida.

8-1 Dare Halstead

Two children, lives in Florida. NFR

William and Nancy Jane are buried on Cal Lilly mountain. One large double stone marks both graves. There are no other graves. Paul Halstead is the only one who knows how to get there.

This concludes the family of Jane Massie and William Halstead, of Alexander of Benjamin.
Continuing with the family of Alexander and Emily, of Benjamin.

g. Lydia Clementine, was born August 9, 1855, died September 14, 1934. She married Edward Fink March 23, 1878. It is believed that Lydia and her sister Celia kept in touch with their other sisters and brothers. Christopher kept a lock of hair he received in letters from Celia and Lydia. Lydia and Celia lived near one another in Beckley.

   g-1 James, NFR

   g-2 Mahalia-Walker, NFR.
      2-1 Arvel
      2-2 Ardith
      2-3 James

   g-3 Alex (Roanoke).

   g-4 Chloe (McDaniel)

h. Celia Ann, was born September 14, 1860 and died August 6, 1943 at age eighty three. She was buried at Wildwood cemetery in Beckley. Her nephew Charles was one of the pallbearers. She was the last surviving child of Alexander and Emily Halstead.

Celia wrote to her brothers at Elkview and may have visited them in her later years. The grandchildren of her sister Emily remember her visiting them at Ronceverte. They remembered her as a well dressed lady with pretty hats. Celia lived near her sister Lydia and with her son James A. Thompson on Wilson Street in Beckley.

Celia married Aden Birch Thompson, Jr., September 26, 1881 in Raleigh County. They may have had two sons. I have a record of one.

   h-1 James A. Thompson, wife's name unknown.

      1-1 Waymon Lewis Stanley, married Donna Sue Underwood.

Writing on the gravestone at Wildwood:
Celia 1860-1943  G. Evelyn 1889-1961
Emily Burke was born January 30, 1858 at Bowyer Creek and was named for her mother. She was twelve years old when her father Alexander died at the Whitby farm. Buchanan was the President and the following year John Brown raided the Harper's Ferry arsenal.

Emily's first job was as a housekeeper for a couple who had no children, the woman was an invalid. Emily left her job after her employer took advantage of her. Sometime later while on the way to the home of her friends Gilbert and Sarah Morgan in Greenbrier County she went into labor and was put off the train near the home of a black family who took her in and cared for her and her newborn son until she was ready to continue on. Emily and her son lived with the Morgan family for a while.

Flora Morgan, daughter of Jacob died soon after giving birth to her only child, Taylor Morgan. Her husband remarried to Rachel Comer they lived near Ronceverte and were parents to eight children. They are buried in the Morgan cemetery at Ronceverte. Flora was buried in the Miller-Halstead cemetery on Indian Creek. Flora's father Jacob had a sister Nancy. Nancy and her husband Gholson Mann had a daughter Minerva. Minerva married Joel Morgan, a widower with six children and their son Andrew Wellington Morgan and his wife had a lovely daughter Lula Mae Morgan. Lula Mae grew up to marry Perry "Web" Pauley, son of Emily who was born in the home of the black family.

An additional point of interest is that my first cousin Eric Lucas found himself a bride among the Morgan's of Greenbrier County a few years ago. Unbeknown to our family it seems as if the Halsteads and Morgans have been acquainted for five generations.

Emily's brothers Green and Christopher were living in Kanawha County after the war and Emily went to live with her brother Green for a while in Kanawha County. While working there in a restaurant she met and married John Pauley February 2, 1893. He was a widower with five children.

Emily, John and three of his children moved to Irish Corner, Greenbrier County. Her friends the Morgans deeded twelve acres to Emily January 1, 1897 for one dollar which included the Martin tract with a house. Emily's mother was selling the Whitby properties and as mentioned previously, moved to Irish Corner to live with her daughter. Emily's son Perry took the last name of Pauley. Emily and John were parents of two children, Robert and Mary Ann.

Emily's mother died a few years after going to Greenbrier County, January 23, 1900. She willed everything she owned to her baby granddaughter Mary Ann Pauley who was two years old, including everything in her bedroom. Emily bought two tracts of land from Gilbert Morgan February 10, 1900, for four hundred dollars which was about twenty nine acres. She raised her family and worked very hard, attended church and had many good friends. Emily died May 20, 1925 at Irish Corner and was buried beside her mother in the Pauley family cemetery. Both have nice gravestones and the cemetery is well kept.

About four or five generations lived at or near the old homeplace at Irish Corner and the old house is still there. The family lost ties with others when Celia and Emily died and the present generation had no knowledge of one another until 1995. We
have now become acquainted and enjoy getting together to reminisce about our newly found ancestors and have had the pleasure of meeting Lula Mae Morgan-Pauley who is ninety five years young at this time. Emily's family are:

i-1 Perry "Web" Pauley was born 1888, died 1974. (His uncle Green had a son named Perry "Webster").

Web was in WW I, Army Air Corp, stationed near Fort Worth, Texas. After the war he married Lula Mae Morgan, May 24, 1922, the daughter of Wellington and Hassie Martin-Morgan, mentioned previously. Web owned and operated a mill. They were parents of twelve children, all of whom are college educated.

1-1 Ruby Constance, born 1923, died 1994, of cancer. She was a Secretary. Married to Howard Taylor.

1-1 Frederick Taylor.
1-2 Gregory.
1-3 Thomas. Three of the boys were stepsons.

1-2 Arlene Mae, born 1924, died 1990 of cancer. Arlene was a Secretary and not married.

1-3 Elva Catherine, born 1926, married Billy Joe Martin. (See Malinda Kessinger, daughter of Mary Polly Halstead and James H. Kessinger) Malinda and James were the great grandparents of Billy Joe Martin.

3-1 Billy Joe, Jr.
3-2 Sandra-Steel.
3-3 Gregory.
3-4 Theresa.
3-5 Web Kelly.
3-6 Walt. Walt and Web were twins.
3-7 Ann.
3-8 Joan.
3-9 Timmie Joycelyn.
3-10 Andrew Russell.
3-11 Amy Lisa.

1-4 Winifred Joycelyn, born 1928 and is a Registered Nurse. Lives near her mother, not married.

1-5 Edwin Jerold, born 1930. Accountant, not married.

1-6 Theodore Ralph, born 1932. Engineer, married Elizabeth Davis.

6-1 Janet-Nelson.
6-2 Nancy-Corner.
6-3 Elizabeth-Lowe.
6-4 Katherine.
1-7 Dennis Lee, born 1933. Postman.


1-9 Margaret Jean, born 1936, died as an infant.

1-10 Emily Jane, born 1938. Emily is an advocate. Married to George Hoslwade.

10-1 Christian Neal.
10-2 George.
10-3 Melanie Jane.


1-12 Perry Webster, Jr., born 1945. Attorney, married to Joyce Colwell.

12-1 Perry Webster, III.


2-1 Anna Marie, born 1-1922, died 1990.

2-2 Calvin Simmons, born 9-1924.


2-4 Eugene Lee, married Vonnie.

4-1 Rebecca.


3-1 Hubbard, died at four.

3-2 Kathleen Burke, married Lambert Morgan.

2-1 Delbert, married Sarah Haynes.
2-2 Charlotte, married Paul Wong.
2-3 Dayton. He and his wife died in a car collision in Ohio.
2-4 Carol, married Ernest Ramsey.
2-5 Linda, married Manfred Bennett.

3-3 Marjorie Virginia, married Guy Wykle.

3-1 Kenneth Wykle, Brigadier General, thirty two years in the U. S. Army. Attended West Virginia University, mastering in Psychology at Ball University, Muncie Indiana. Legion of Merit Award three times. Two bronze stars. Retired from the

3-2 Tony, car salesman.
3-3 Janet, psychologist.
3-4 Steve, died as an infant.

3-4 Nellie Mae, married Paul Lockhart.

4-1 Mary Ann.

3-5 Arnold Tony, born 1927, died 1994. (Heart)
3-6 Vergie Ann, married Billy Munsey.
3-7 Forest Edgar, Unmarried.

This concludes the children of Alexander and Emily, of Benjamin of James.
Emily Keatley-Halstead with her daughter Emily B. and her husband John Pauley. Son Perry Web and Baby Robert who was born in 1896. Below is an Elderly Emily Halstead.
CHAPTER EIGHT

II Mordicai, Son of Benjamin, of James

III Virginia Elizabeth, Daughter of Benjamin of James

IV Aseneth, Daughter of Benjamin of James

V Lena, Daughter of Benjamin? of James

VI Lelia, Daughter of Benjamin? of James

VII Amos, Son of Benjamin of James

VIII Benjamin Jr., Son of Benjamin of James

IX Chloe, Daughter of Benjamin of James

X Preston, Son of Benjamin of James

XI Emily, Daughter of Benjamin of James

XII Nancy, Daughter of Benjamin of James

XIII Lorenzo Dow, Son of Benjamin of James

BIBLIOGRAPHY
Continuing with the children of Benjamin and Patience.

II  Mordicai Edward, second son of Benjamin and Patience Roles-Halstead was born March 12, 1808. Thomas Jefferson was President and Jefferson Davis was born in 1808. Mordicai was perhaps named for Mordicai Roles, brother of Patience? He attended school in a log house on the banks of Indian Creek on land donated by Benjamin, and attended church built on land donated by his father. Mordicai first appeared in Monroe County records in the year of 1832, living in his father's house and paid twelve cents tax on his horse. He was about twenty four at the time and after paying his tax in 1833 he was no longer in Monroe County records. The following year Mordicai married Margaret "Peggy" McClung, February 20, 1834, with Rev. Spotts performing the ceremony. (Recorded at Lewisburg) Mordicai was a surveyor and perhaps working around Lewisburg at the time.

Margaret McClung was the daughter of James and Mary Alderson McClung and a granddaughter of William and Abigail Dickson McClung. Her great grandparents were John and Rebecca Stuart McClung. William and Abigail were the first settlers on Meadow River who took a tomahawk claim for one hundred thousand acres. They built their first cabin with not a store or mill within one hundred miles. The Indians were so troublesome that William plowed with his rifle tied to his shoulder while Abigail with her musket and three children took refuge in the dense swamp during the day and returned at night when her husband was there to defend them. They were parents of eleven children. Their son James married Mary Alderson-March 1803 and were parents of nine children; Minerva, John Dickerson, George Alderson, Sarah, Louise, Margaret "Peggy", James, Mary Catherine and William Wallace who was named for the famous Scotsman whose life was portrayed in the movie "Braveheart".

George Rogers Clark "Hanibal of the West" recorded in his diary on the trip from Harrodsburg, Kentucky-October, November 1777, covering six hundred twenty miles tell of him spending the night at J. McClungs house. In southwestern Virginia John McClung was living at the "Forks of the James near Natural Bridge and this was probably the earliest recorded meeting of the Clarks and McClungs.

In pioneer days of Nicholas County, West Virginia, the vicinity of Mt. Lookout was a community known as the McClung settlement. From 1750-1770 to 1976 at least seven generations can be counted.

The first John McClung fled from Scotland to Ireland and then to America settling in Augusta County, Virginia in the early 1700's (From the Clark and McClung family history by John Clark of Fayetteville whose wife Noreen descended from this family).

Mordicai and Peggy purchased one hundred and twenty acres November 11, 1844, situated in Nicholas and Fayette Counties. (Bk C, page 531) They built their log home between Ramsey and Leander. They were parents of eleven children.

When the Civil War began Mordicai and four of his sons, having strong sentiments for southern state's rights enlisted in the Confederacy. Mordicai (a friend of Jefferson Davis) enlisted at White Sulphur Springs May 10, 1861 at the age of fifty three. Was in Company C, Twenty second Virginia Infantry. Military records in the archives
show that Private Mordicai Halstead was mortally wounded at the Battle of Dry Creek, at Lewisburg, August 26th, 1863. He suffered greatly from wounds in his side and legs and was taken to the old Stone Church at Lewisburg which was being used as a hospital. One leg was amputated because of gangrene. His suffering ended when he died September 17, 1863. His son Captain John James was with him at the time of death. The dead Confederate soldiers of Dry Creek were buried in a common grave a few feet from the Church’s south wall. Mordicai gave his life for his interest in his country and family. There is a government marker for him in the cemetery on Saturday road in Fayette county. His wife Margaret and eight of their children are buried there.

The Battle of Dry Creek was a two day encounter, August 26th and 27th between General Sam Jones’s confederates and General Avrell’s Federals. The action was also known as Howard’s Creek, White Sulphur Springs and Rocky Gap. The area of the battle is now a shopping center. Losses were three hundred and fifty men.

Margaret was a widow with nine children, four sons in the Confederate army. Her son Joseph died as a POW at Camp Chase, Ohio.

Margaret continued on with her life after the war. She donated land for the Liberty Baptist Church at Ramsey, built by her sons and others and is still there. Margaret was loved and respected by the community and her family. She died at age eighty three February 1894 and is buried in the family cemetery on Saturday Road. Her descendents, honest, religious, good people became community leaders in the area and surrounding counties and have fought in all wars. They are loyal to the memory of their family and get together for family reunions. Our family had no knowledge of our Fayette County cousins until Clint Halstead answered my letter of inquiry. The children of Mordicai and Peggy were; Minerva, George, John James, William Amos, Joseph, George A, Lewis Osborne, Thomas Simpson, Benjamin D., Levi Columbus and Mary Louise. The following records, stories and pictures were furnished mostly by Clinton Halstead and some of the other descendents.

a. Minerva Catherine, born February 16, 1835, died February 12, 1917. Minerva married three times, first to William Thomas McCutcheon, March 1860, to a Cavendish, January 1895 and to Charles Harrah June 24, 1900. Her children’s father was Bill McCutcheon.

   a-1 Mary P., born 1861.
   a-2 John C. McCutcheon.
   a-3 Amanda A.
   a-4 Hazelme, married Floyd J. Harrah, December 18, 1901.
   a-5 Virginia, born 1876, died 2-25-1950, married Vaga Kincaid.

      5-1 Randolph.
      5-2 Lucille-Neil
      5-3 Oleva-Legg.
      5-4Alden C.
b. George Newman, born and died 1836. Buried in Crist cemetery on Saturday Road.

c. John James, born October 29, 1837, died April 24, 1931 at the age of ninety four.
Andrew Jackson was the President, a year previously the Alamo fell to the Mexicans
and a year later Queen Victoria was crowned.

After the Civil War John married Virginia Dotson December 26, 1876. They lived
at Cross Lanes.

John enlisted in the Confederate Army May 10, 1861, the Mountain Cove Guards
which was reorganized in 1862 to the Twenty Second Virginia Infantry. He was in
battles at Scary Creek, Cross Lanes in August 1861 and Carnifex Ferry 1861. He
was at Sewell Mountain, Cotton Hill and by May 23rd 1862 at Lewisburg. He was
in the Kanawha Valley campaign, October 1862, White Sulphur Springs April until
September in the fall. November at Droop Mountain, December at Sweet Springs.
During the spring of 1862 John was a prisoner of war for five months at Camp Chase,
Ohio. He was a Captain, Company A, under the Command of William Thurmond.
At the end of the war he was paroled at Lewisburg, April 26, 1865 at age twenty eight.

John’s colorful war experiences are mentioned in several books including the Ramsey
Family History by James Ramsey.

An article in the Nicholas Chronicle, November 27, 1927 honored George Alderson,
W. H. Neal, Captain John James Halstead, Wyatt Meador, Jilson Neal and J. C.
Loughrey during a visit of the old soldiers at the home of George Alderson, the
article states "Captain John J. Halstead, resident of Kessler's Cross Lanes, the oldest
living Confederate in the County was eighty nine years old. John volunteered and
was assigned to Co. C, 22nd Infantry the first year of the war and fought his first
fight in Kanawha County at Scary Creek. Later, during the battle at Carnifex Ferry
he was taken prisoner and sent to Camp Chase. After his release he made up
Company A, Houssell's Batt. which was known as Halstead's Company. He was
captured by Riley Ramsey's Company and taken to a Charleston prison with four other
men, George Halstead, William McClung, William Amick and John Amick. They were
captured at John Amick's on Angling's Creek and taken to James R. Ramsey's for one
night, four guards were placed over each man. From there they went to John
McCutchion's house at Cross Lanes where they spent another night under guard.
They departed in the morning and Captain Ramsey wished Captain Halstead good luck
and goodbye. Captain Halstead told him he would see him in two weeks if the Lord
was willing. They were taken to prison, he and others dug a hole down under the
prison wall with a spade and their fingernails. After gaining their freedom, slipped
through the Union Camp and over the hill. They were chased by Union soldiers up
Campbell's Creek and went into the mountains and were chased as far as Blue Creek.
They covered themselves with leaves in a hole which enabled them to escape to
return home. They traveled up Blue Creek without shoes or hats, snow began falling
in the afternoon fast becoming three inches deep. They succeeded in finding the
residence of John Martin who fed and supplied them with shoes for the remainder
of the trip and stayed there from Sunday to Wednesday night. As they started to leave
they "planked" a yankee pickett. They traveled up Gauley to Little Elk and there built
a raft by tying logs together with grapevines and briers and ferried to Fayette County.
John arrived safely at his father's house on Laurel Creek, spent two days, was given
a horse and succeeded in reaching Confederate lines where he took command of
his company. He remained with his men until the surrender of 1865.

Captain James Ramsey gives a good account of the shop fight in his book, involving himself and Captain Halstead near Meadow River. Each was trying to get the other, John claiming that Captain Ramsey was as cunning as a red fox and he had tried to pen him seven or eight times but Ramsey would slip out taking most of his men. Ramsey recounts them being very old now and wrote to each other discussing the war. James Ramsey visited John in later years and he commented on John's near blindness and in parting called each other friend. John wrote the story of the shop fight in a letter to Ramsey which is printed in James Ramsey's book.

Jeffrey Weaver mentions in his book Thurmond's Rangers that Captain Halstead guided a large force with Captain Witcher in to Nicholas County, some being McClungs, Lilly's, Wiseman's and others. Other skirmishes were between Ramsey's, Wisemans (Union) and Halstead's (Confederates) whose descendents married into each others families after the war perhaps unaware of their differences during the war and by then it made no difference to most, although a few carried grudges until death. The Wiseman's were divided, some fighting on opposite sides. There was grief and conflict between families who had been friends and neighbors for years.

After the war John was a Sheriff, merchant and real estate dealer in Nicholas County. He was five foot ten inches, blue eyes. He died April 24, 1931 and is buried at Zoar.

c-1 Annie, born September 1868, was a teacher at Trinidad, Colorado. Never married.

c-2 Lewis E. Born February 1870, married and lived at Colorado Springs.

c-3 Joseph Floyd, born October 1871, died 1976 at age of one hundred and four. Never married, claimed he couldn't find a girl in the notion. He firmly believed that everyone should be Baptist and Democrats.

c-4 Squire, born March 8, 1873, died April 15, 1958. He lived at Gad and attended West Virginia University and was one of the first lawyers in the class of 1894, practiced law briefly in Summersville. He was a member of the Nicholas County Bar Association, member of the Knights of Pythias Lodge and the Zoar Baptist Church. Squire lived in a log house built by his dad in the 1860's which was used as a store. He made many trips, wrote many letters to the Governor and Legislators giving time and effort to get the Carnifex Ferry State Park started. The parks museum has a picture of him posted in their main building, or did in 1994. Squire was a member of the prohibitionist party and wrote letters to the editor of the Gazette criticizing drinking of whiskey and went about the county speaking of the demons of whiskey. Among his piles of letters found later were many pledges of people swearing off. He kept a picture of "his girl" who lived in Colorado. Squire is buried at Zoar.

c-5 Ada Mae, born May 12, 1875, died April 26, 1933, married Louis Koontz September 30, 1904. One son.

5-1 Louis Koontz.
2-2 Wanda Leah, born 4-6-1927.

3-3 Earl Sherwood, born 6-6-1904, died 11-2-1962. Married Daisy Pearl Bailes, 6-9-1934.

3-1 Allen Earl, born 8-16-1937.
3-2 Larry Dale, born 3-28-1940.
3-3 Dana Edward, born 10-19-1941.


4-1 Ellen Dee Sennett.

(Second marriage to Harry R. Corder).


5-1 Mary Ellen Morris, born 11-29-1925.
5-2 Beatrice Alberta, born 5-30-1928.


6-1 Myrna Lee, born 8-26-1938.
6-2 Myra Lou, born 8-26-1938.
6-3 Trisha Sue, born 8-8-1943.
6-4 Andrew Wyatt, born 5-21-1947.

3-7 Almeda Loradell, born 7-21-1912, married Charles Warner, born 7-6-1898, died 5-30-1970.


8-1 James William, born 4-11-1942.
8-2 David Lee, born 7-11-1945.


9-2 Ruscee Ann, born 5-5-1951.

c-7 George Quinton, born December 27, 1880, died 1975. Married Eugenia Taylor February 28, 1907.

7-1 John Floyd, born 1-13-1908, died 1996 at age eighty eight, unmarried.

7-2 Nellie Lucille, born 1909, lived at Romaine, Ohio. Married Vinton Ramsey.

2-1 Jean Ramsey.


3-1 Cathrine, born 7-16-1941.
3-2 Betty Lou.

7-4 Charles Quinton, born 6-1925. WW II, 1943-Normandy, Northern France, Rhineland and wounded in France June 1944.

d. Reverend William Amos, born December 4, 1840, died December 19, 1919. Married Jerucia Beaver, October 19, 1871. (Born 1847, died 1-16-1930 at age eighty two).

William was also in the Twenty Second Virginia Volunteer's. He enlisted June 6, 1861 Company C. He was captured in Greenbrier County by the 47th Ohio Volunteer's Infantry, April 15, 1862. POW at Camp Chase, Ohio, exchanged August 25th, 1862 John Caringer. John Amick's Scouts and Co. I, Thurmond's Rangers were paroled April 25th 1865 at Lewisburg. His experiences were about the same as his brother John as they were together most of the time. War records describe him as five foot, ten inches, dark hair, fair complexion, hazel eyes, farmer in Fayette County. William and Jerucia were parents of ten children. They are buried at Mt. Gilead cemetery.

d-1 Henrietta, born 8-6-1872, died 1-4-1879 of diptheria.

d-2 Virginia, born 11-27-1874, died 12-16-1879 of diptheria.

d-3 James Wyatt, born 2-28-1877, died in a slate fall June 1, 1935. Married Martha Ellen Bailes, 5-3-1900. He worked in the lumber business and was a mine foreman at Tamroy.


1-1 Frederick, Jr., born 10-2-1919, died 11-22-1921.
1-2 Marjorie, born 10-21-1921.
1-3 Leon, born 1-6-1923.
1-4 Juanita, born 3-4-1924.

3-2 Gertrude Frances, born 4-6-1903, died 1-22-1982, married Francis Berry 7-5-1923.

2-1 Jacqueline Ellen, born 11-15-1924, died 11-7-1983.
3-10 Amos E., born August 1918, died August 5, 1921.


11-1 James Wyatt, born 6-13-1942. Married Ruth Ann Cavender.

1-1 Carole C., born 10-3-1959.


2-1 Georgia Ann, born 1-14-1963
2-3 Scott Patrick, born 4-25-1967.

Charles second wife-Patricia Ann Hamrick, born 11-2-1948.

11-3 Marie Rose, raised by James and Anna Halstead, married Steven Lightner.


3-14 Freda Mae, born 8-10-1928, married Charles Edwards.

d-4 Wallace, born 1879, died 1884.


5-1 Glenna Mae, born 11-25-1912, married Curtis McClung.
5-3 James, born 11-16-1916.
5-4 Ronald S. born 12-3-1918, died 10-7-1991, married Marietta Hayslette. Ronald was in WW II.
5-5 Grace, born 1920, married Everette McClung 12-5-1942.
5-6 Rayborne Leon, born 12-2-1922, died 12-6-1922.
5-7 Infant born and died 2-17-1924.
5-8 Randall Wilson, born 4-11-1925, married Imogene Grizzle.

8-1 Randall, born 6-8-1948.
8-2 Bonnie Jean, born 1-6-1950.
8-3 Sandra Sue, born 9-2-1957.
5-9 Reginald Leon, born 8-28-1928

5-10 Babe, born 2-22-1930, married Patricia Elaine, died 5-23-1994

5-11 Dolly Marie, born 2-26-1933, married James Boley 12-24-51

d-6 Murrell, born 1884, died 1884.

d-7 Georgia, born 1885, died 1996.

d-8 William Simpson, born 6-8-1888, died 12-1-1910.

d-9 Margaret, born 5-1892.


After the war ended George and his brother Thomas went out west and during his time there he learned of a cure for skin cancer from the Winnebago Indians. Back home in West Virginia he went about curing skin cancer from his recipe of herbs that he mixed on a rock.


1-2 Linda Susan

1-2 Thasis O., born 1911. Married Lucian L. Fowler
1-3 Buster Jr., born 3-4-1914, died 10-17-1915

4-1 Sally Ann, born 3-2-1944
4-2 Joseph Roger, born 1-5-1946
4-3 James Herbert, born 2-19-1955
1-5 Carl, born 5-12-1918, died 9-22-1963. Married Bonnadeen Booker 5-25-1945. Carl was with the U.S. Air Force and was lost at sea.

5-1 Constance Ann
5-2 Debra Jean

Icie remarried to John Lewis Evans March 11, 1925. He was born August 11, 1875, died March 1951.

George Alderson's marriage to Lillie Belle Copenhaver was January 4, 1885, daughter of William and Nancy Grose-Copenhaver. Their children were;


2-1 Mason Alderson, born 2-6-1917

Jack remarried to Lois Crays.

2-2 Lillie Evelyn, born 11-1925

e-3 Chessie Violet, born 10-27-1891. Married Reuben Bradshaw.

e-4 Pinkie P., born 9-13-1894. Married John Fortune

e-5 Birdie D., born 3-24-1897, married Howard Thomas

e-6 Ralph C., born 5-24-1903. Flonnie Collins

Some family history written previously of the Halsteads of West Virginia does not coincide with the Greenbrier and Monroe County records. Our Benjamin, son of James was incorrectly connected to the father of a Halstead group in New York. Research of old records show that Benjamin was the son of James Halstead, born 1781, North Carolina during the Revolution. Our people left a long paper trail beginning 1786 in Greenbrier County and up to the present time. Our people may have been of some kinship to the two early families of New York and Norfolk, Virginia. There was an early settlement in north eastern Pennsylvania in a township called Halstead. Further research is needed to learn where James came from after he came from England.

James was not found previously to 1787 in Virginia, New York, North Carolina or Pennsylvania records, nor the counties of West Virginia. I haven't searched New Jersey.

Records are scarce before 1787 and I won't live long enough to find where James came from. Some clues may be Col. Henry or William Heath, General Daniel Morgan, Joseph Sciers (Sawyers), or Christopher Roles of Sullivan County, North Carolina. New Jersey and Maryland. Also Ft. Pitt, Pa., West Augusta, VA., (all before 1777).
f. Lewis Osborne, born February 8, 1847, died August 14, 1899 in Nicholas County. He married Priscilla Ann Wood, December 16, 1875. She was the daughter of Nancy and James H. Wood, born October 8, 1851. She died February 28, 1919 of brights disease. They lived at Mt. Lookout and Lewis worked for the railroad. They are buried at Mt. Pleasant cemetery.

f-1 James Mordicai, born 11-28-1876, died 3-5-1963, Kanawha County. Married Martha Matilda Oatey, daughter of Thomas Benton Oatey and Susan Rader. No children.

f-2 Effie Cornelia, born 7-2-1878, died 9-4-1950, married Marion Edward McClung 10-17-1900.
   2-1 Nash McClung, born 7-1-1901
   2-2 Vella McClung, birthdate unknown
   2-3 Lloyd McClung, born 1905.

Effie's second marriage was to John A. McClung 8-29-1914.

      1-1 Bonnie Lee Legg, born 6-16-1926, married Ira Oliver Groves 3-16-1946.
      1-2 Anna Faye Legg, born 2-22-1928, married Fred McClung 12-6-1947.
      2-1 James Reginald Dietz, born 11-15-1929
      2-2 John William Dietz, born 12-17-1934
      3-1 Wanda Charlene, born 4-10-1947
      3-2 Kenneth Craig, born 4-13-1953
      3-3 Letha Doris, born 9-27-1957
      4-1 Helen Johnston, born 12-5-1942

3-5 William Clinton Halstead, born 10-26-1926, Nicholas County. Married Marguerite R. McKisic 8-4-1951. Daughter of Alpha Ray McKisic and Addie Lea Waugh. Born 1-7-1923. Clint was employed by the Mid-Allegheny Corporation owned by the B & O Railroad.


f-4 Henry B., born February 22, 1882, died 10-25-1886.

f-5 Lewis Allen, born 1-3-1884, died 2-26-1967. Married Ocic Pearl Underwood 4-19-1909. Daughter of James Underwood and Evalina Shaffer, born 2-17-1887, died 8-1-1963. Lewis was a farmer and worked for the railroad. Ocic was a great cook and could play the harmonica. Parents of ten children;

5-1 Della Mae. Married Aaron E. Smith, May 7, 1927.


2-1 Cecil Delbert, born 5-15-1942.
2-2 Carol A., born 9-6-1946.
2-3 Joan Frances, born 11-26-1951.

5-3 Leroy Burton, born 1-11-1915, died 8-26-1943. Married to Violet Hensley.

3-2 Mary M., born 1943, married Jodie Norman Farthing.
3-3 Lewis.
3-4 Josephine.


4-1 Henry Allen
4-2 Terry Lee
4-3 Sandra Kay
4-4 David

* Our cousin and friend William Clinton Halstead died in March-2000. He was a very special person who passed briefly through our lives and will always be remembered for the many good qualities that makes a man outstanding in the memories of people who knew him.
5-5 Lewis Edward, born 4-11-1919. Married Ruby Raleigh.

5-1 James.
5-2 David Lee.
5-3 Deborah Jean.

5-6 Ira Watson, born 1-25-1921, died 7-13-1931.

5-7 Minnie Evelyn, born 3-12-1923, married Clifton Champe 7-12-1940.

7-1 Margie.
7-2 Nancy.

5-8 James Oscar, born 6-14-1925, married Juanita Hess.


9-1 Linda Jean
9-2 Joseph Herbert.
9-3 James Linty.

5-10 Emma Jesse, born 4-5-1931. Married Mark Osborne 3-2-1956 son of Mansfield and Pearl Mose-Osborne.

f-6 Goshorn, born 3-22-1886, died 1-7-1938.

f-7 Agnes G. born 5-2-1889, died 10-7-1986.


8-1 Faye
8-2 Mary


This concludes the family of Lewis Osborne Halstead.
g. Thomas Simpson of Mordica was born March 8, 1848. Polk was the President.
About that time Thomas A. Edison was born and the Mormon's settled in Salt Lake City, Utah. Thomas died March 16, 1934.

Thomas was about thirteen when his father and older brothers went off to join the Confederate army. After the war Thomas and his brother George went west to Nebraska and it was there that he met his future bride. He married Eugenia Bouvier October 19, 1875 at De Sota Nebraska. Eugenia was born in Indiana February 1854 and died October 31, 1944 at the age of ninety. Her father, Lewis Bouvier was born in France and mother was born in Switzerland, she being a farmer's wife and a watchmaker.

After about two years Thomas and Eugenia moved back to West Virginia. He was a merchant and farmer. They raised their family, took part in church activities and opened their home to circuit preachers. Thomas taught Sunday School for thirty five years. They lived at Ramsey and Gauley Bridge. Thomas acquired heirship at his parents death. Thomas and Eugenia are buried at the Liberty Baptist Church at Ramsey.

g-1 Laura May, born October 4, 1876. Married William McCutcheon.

g-2 Charles Lewis, born December 29, 1877, died August 14, 1933 at Beckley. He married Mamie Sophia Davis, June 24, 1900. She was born August 20, 1883, died December 24, 1954. Both are buried at Sunset cemetery at Beckley.

2-1 Charles Lester, born 1901, married Daisy Woods 6-28-1924.
2-2 Edgar Stanley, born 1903.
2-3 Nina.
2-4 John Harold
2-5 Clinton Oral
2-6 Ada.
2-7 Everette Louie, born 7-23-1914, Beckley. Electrician.


1-1 Cheryl Cook, MD. Owns Tri State Pediatrics, Ashland, Kentucky.

2-8 Aubra Quinton.
2-9 Margaret.
g-3 Minnie, born 7-26-1879, married Ben Hawkins.

3-1 Nollie
3-2 Duell

g-4 Amy, born 5-11-1881, married Jack Winebrenner.

4-1 Oppie
4-2 Cletus
4-3 Willis


5-1 Dulcie, born 1903
5-2 Murrell, born 1906
5-3 Orcel, born 1907
5-4 Lewis Harold, born 7-3-1908

Henry Married Minnie Margaret Taute, 4-14-1917, Dakota City, Nebraska. Minnie was born 1891, died 1983.

5-5 Irene, born 1918
5-6 Eugenie, married Leonard Van Winkle.
5-7 Margaret Marie, born 1921 at Blair Nebraska. Married William Smith also Harold Adams.
5-8 Van Thomas, born 1923, married Bernice Hofmeister.
5-9 Laura, born 1926, married Edward Spears, California.
5-10 Robert Lee, born 1929, married Elaine Brittain.
5-11 Sybil, born 1934, married James Powell also Charles Shuford.

g-6 Augustus, born March 9, 1886, died October 5, 1886.

g-7 Eva, born August 31, 1889, died January 4, 1958 at Beckley. Married Charles Richardson, November 21, 1912. Eva and her sister Amy played the organ at Church.

7-1 Wanda, born about 1914.
7-2 Nell Weir, born 1-12-1915, Beckley. Teacher and Assistant Principal. Vice President of Raleigh County Teacher's Assoc. Married John Lemuel Keefer 3-6-1937, Milton. John was in the U.S. Navy, WW II.

2-1 Jerome Richard, born 3-22-1938, died 11-30-1938
2-2 John Wilkerson, born and died 5-7-1946
2-4 Sharon Eugenia, born 12-8-1958. Adopted.
7-3 Floda, born December 7, 1919, married Walter Fredrick Cantabery, November 22, 1951. Walter was born April 4, 1919, Charleston. Was in WW II.

3-1 Fredrick Lane, born 7-22-1952. Married Catherine O'Shea Mace, August 1974.

1-1 John Fredrick, born 4-4-1980
1-2 Abby Lane, born 3-21-1985


g-9 Mamie, born 8-3-1893, died 11-1969, Oak Hill, WV. Married John Hensley 7-21-1921.

9-1 Glenna

g-10 Van Vandel, Sr., born 2-17-1896, died 10-22-1962. Married Bessie Bales, 1918.

10-1 Nadine

Van's second marriage to Lina Davis 9-1924.


2-1 Judith Ann
2-2 Linda Sue


2-3 Van Vandel III, born 9-1975

10-3 Thomas Leon, born 11-1927.


Ben was a merchant, prohibitionist and farmer. They were a kind, loving couple who provided for the unfortunate. They raised Icie McClung. Both buried at the Crist-Halstead cemetery on Saturday Road.

i. Levi Coulumbus, died young.


j-1 Oren, born October 1878.

j-3 William Wood, born October 8, 1881, died September 4, 1886.

j-4 Osborne, born February 16, 1883.

j-5 Mordicai H. born November 10, 1884.

j-6 Richard, born July 10, 1887.

j-7 Lelia Ann, born February 3, 1889.

j-8 Eli Lawrence, born 1891.

This concludes the family of Mordicai and Margaret Halstead.

Below are Pictures of Mordicai Halstead, Son of Benjamin and Patience Roles. His wife Margaret "Peggy" McClung.

These photograph's were given by Robert Halstead of Ohio. He thought the man pictured above was Mordicai, however, the man is probably Christopher Halstead, son of Alexander and Emily Halstead. Christopher is shown sitting beside his brother Green in the same picture which was divided. The original is owned by their brother Henry Halstead's descendents. The lady is probably Margaret McClung.
The dean of the Past 30 Party is Floyd Halstead. He is 98 and just won't miss. He is the guest of Mr. and Mrs. Forest Mansfield when he comes to town and Mrs. Mansfield, being the good host, is always close by to offer a helping hand when needed. Floyd is a native of Mt. Lookout and one of the county's finest citizens.

**Oldest At Party**

George Halstead and his wife Lillie Copenhaver
Descendants of Mordicai and Margaret McClung-Halstead


Third Row: Jack Winebrenner, Amy Halstead-Winebrenner, Lina Halstead, Van Halstead, William Halstead, Henry Halstead, Charles Richardson, Eva Halstead-Richardson, Laura Halstead-McCutcheaon, Graefe Halstead, Mary McCutcheon-Crandell.
III Virginia Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin and Patience was born about 1810. She is believed to be the first daughter, born at the old homeplace of Benjamin on Quaking Asp Run. She was five years old when her grandfather James died.

Virginia married Samuel Clark, October 6, 1829 (the bond date). She was about nineteen and Samuel was twenty two. He was born February 11, 1807, the son of Alexander and Mary Hawkins-Clark who were their neighbors.

The surety bondsmen were Benjamin and Samuel Clark. Virginia's brother Alexander had married Samuel's sister Selenah a year or two previously. Samuel's sister Hannah married Joshua Roles another neighbor.

The Monroe County census of 1850 show the couple living in the district of thirty nine and one-half, the same for Samuel Clark, Sr., and Benjamin. There were several Samuels Clark. Some think they may have lived at Oceana or Turkey Creek. Some of the Clark's moved to Missouri. No further information could be found for Virginia and Samuel.

(Alexander Clark and Mary Hawkins married July 12, 1796).

IV Aseneth, was born about 1811 and also lived and grew up on Quaking Asp Creek. She died about 1858 or before.

Benjamin gave his handwritten permission for her marriage to Selburn Phillips, September 23, 1835. The bondsmen were Selburn and Samuel Clark, Samuel being her brother in law married to Virginia. Selburn was born 1811, the son of John and Agnes Phillips of Franklin County, Virginia. (Aseneth's brother Preston would marry Malinda Phillips of Franklin County and perhaps of the same family).

The 1850 Monroe County census shows the couple living in the district of thirty nine and one-half. Aseneth must have died between 1850 and 1858. Selburn, a widower remarried to Jemima Barton (age 36) in 1859. She was the daughter of Valentine and Elizabeth Phillips. The census of 1880 shows them living in Clay County. Two children were born to them.

Aseneth is a biblical name, pronounced "As-nith", named for the Egyptian wife of Joseph who had the coat of many colors.

Children shown in the 1850 census of Monroe County:

a. Samuel age 14, born 1836.
b. Malinda, age 13, born 1837.
c. Nancy, age 11, born 1839.
d. Preston, age 7, born 1843.
e. John, age 5, born 1845.
Knew all men by these Present, that we

Lelburn Phillips

and Samuel Clark

are held and firmly bound unto

Lelburn Phillips
Governor of Virginia and his successors, for
the use of the Commonwealth, in the sum of One Hundred and Fifty Dollars,
which payment well and truly to be made, we bind ourselves, our heirs executors
and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed
with our seals, and dated this 23rd day of April 1835.

The Condition of the above Obligation is such, That whereas a Marriage is shortly
intended to be solemnized between the above bound

Lelburn Phillips and Aseneth Halstead

of Monroe County, if therefore there shall be no lawful cause to obstruct the
said Marriage, then the above Obligation to be void, else to remain in full force and virtue.

Signed, Sealed and delivered, in the presence of:

Lelburn Phillips

Samuel Clark

To the Clerk of Monroe County, Sir, you will please to let Samuel Clark have
Marriage License for Lelburn Phillips and Aseneth Halstead

Benjamin Halsted

1835
Children born with Jemima:

  g. Isabel, age 16, born 1864.
  h. James, age 12, born 1868.

V Lena Halstead was born about 1815. Married Andrew Phillips, performed by Rev. John Alderson about 1835. Lena is presumed to be the daughter of Benjamin and Patience. She could not have been the daughter of Amos or John because she was not accounted for in their families. No information could be found for Lena and Andrew Phillips.

VI Lelia Halstead born about 1816, married Robert Morgan in Raleigh County. She is presumed to be the daughter of Benjamin and Patience. No further records could be found. There was a Robert Morgan in the 1840 Cabell County census and a Robert Morgan, Wayne County in 1850. And there were the Morgan's of Ronceverte.

Marriage Bond for Virginia Elizabeth Halstead and Samuel Clark:

KNOW all men by these presents, that we Samuel Clark of

Benjamin Halstead — are held and firmly bound unto
William D.Biles — Governor of Virginia and his successors,
for the use of the Commonwealth, in the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, to
which payment well and truly to be made we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors
and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with
our seals and dated this 6th day of October, A.D. 1829.

The condition of the above obligation is such, that whereas a marriage is shortly
intended to be solemnized between the above bound Samuel Clark
and Elizabeth Halstead
of Monroe county, if therefore, there shall be no lawful cause to obstruct the said
marriage, then the above obligation to be void, otherwise to remain in full
force and virtue.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of

Jane Hutchinson Clark. Lena Halstead
Amos, son of Benjamin and Patience was born between 1814 and 1819. (Perhaps he was named for his uncle Amos who left Indian Creek in 1815 to live in Kanawha County).

Amos was mentioned in property tax records for three years although he paid no tax. He was of an age but owned no property. In 1839 he paid tax on his horse. After Amos signed the surety bond for Caleb Toler to marry his sister Nancy in June of 1842 he was never mentioned again in records of West Virginia.

The marriage records of Scioto County, Ohio show Amos Halstead marrying Nancy Anderson, May 12, 1849 in township of Nile. Nancy had three children and together they had a son Henry. Amos gave his permission for his stepdaughter Martha Anderson to marry William Parks, January 26, 1854. Amos and Nancy didn't stay married.

Amos married Rebecca Howard, May 22, 1863. Rebecca was born November 16, 1844 in Lewis County, Kentucky, daughter of J. W. and Ruth Howard. Amos was about forty nine and Rebecca was twenty. In 1870 they were living near Pond Run, Scioto, County, Ohio. Seven children were born to them in Ohio.

After the civil war ended the migration to the west began. Amos and Nancy moved to Nebraska sometime after 1870 and before 1878 because his son Henry died and was buried in 1878 at Blair, Nebraska. This was his first son born of his marriage to Nancy Anderson.

About the same time Amos's sister Nancy and her husband Caleb Toler moved to Furnas County, Nebraska. It is unknown whether the families traveled together or at the same time. Also his nephews Thomas and George, sons of his brother Mordicai had gone to De Sota, Washington County, Nebraska about 1875, and returned to West Virginia. The reason for moving to Nebraska is unknown.

Amos died at age sixty seven in 1881. He was buried at Blair, Washington County, Nebraska. Rebecca was still young. She remarried to David C. Allen, June 1, 1884. by Rev. M. E. Noble. David was the son of David and Nancy Allen. Witness for the marriage was Mrs. Nellie Noble.

The children of Amos were;

a. Henry, born about 1852, Ohio, died 1878, Blair, Nebraska. His mother was Nancy Anderson.


d. Malinda Ellen, born May 28, 1866, Portsmouth, Ohio. Married William David Allen, January 11, 1885, born June 28, 1865 at Blair, Nebraska. He was the son of William C., and Abigail Allen.


       1-1 Bert Howard, born 6-27-1924.
       1-3 Lora Mae, married Richard Dean Irvin.

   d-2 Marie Iva, born 1888, married Ernest Ladwig, born 1888.

   d-3 Leland Allen, born 1896, married Tilda Ladwig.

   d-4 Mae Eleanore, born 1901.

e. Nancy J. NFR


   (Mason County records: George W. Halstead, of Amos, of Benjamin born 1857, moved to Blair, Nebraska)

This concludes the family of Amos, of Benjamin Halstead.
VIII Benjamin, Jr., born about 1817. He first appeared in Monroe County property tax records in the year of 1837 and was listed each year until 1841. He was of age but not charged with tax. Benjamin Jr., and his brother Amos could not be found in Virginia records after 1841.

He may have been one of the following:

Benjamin Halstead and Sarah Akers lived in Michigan with a family of four from 1860 to 1866.

Benjamin Halstead of Washington County, Oregon was age thirty two in 1850, born in Virginia in the year of 1818.

Benjamin Halstead, Indiana in 1850.

IX Chloe (Elsie ?) was born about 1819. She was probably the daughter of Benjamin and Patience.

Chloe married George Keaton August 29, 1836. George was born February 10, 1816. He was the son of Elder Johnson Keaton. Surety bondsman was William Mann. In the 1850 census of Mercer County, they were living in the 42nd district.

(Aubrey Smith of the Smith-Riffe collection of papers; ”The family moved to Chillicothe, Ohio and Chloe died there November 22, 1881”).

a. John C., born about 1837.
b. Martha, born about 1838.
c. Lewis, born about 1839.
d. Manfred, born about 1841.
e. Isaac L., born about 1845.
f. Elizabeth N., born about 1850.
Preston Halstead, son of Benjamin was born about 1820. He first appeared in Monroe County property tax records in the year of 1842 and paid tax on his horse, which was twelve cents.

Preston was twenty two and left Monroe County the year of 1842. He went to Franklin County, Virginia, perhaps to work. The next year he married Malinda L. Phillips March 16, 1843, Franklin County, Virginia. Gills Creek, township of Halesford, located in the Smith mountain area. William P. Flowers was his surety bondsman.

(Zachariah Phillips was a resident of Monroe County in 1799 who had property on Laurel Creek. A Zachariah Phillips received land grants on the Peeedee River, Anson County, North Carolina in 1750.)

Preston and Malinda lived in Franklin County and had children born there. Between 1870 and 1880 they moved to Kanawha County and were counted in the Kanawha County census, occupation farmer, age sixty. His sister Nancy Toler and Caleb were living in Kanawha County at Millcreek. No records were found to indicate where Preston and Malinda died. (Part of this family was researched and entered into the LDS Ancestral files at the Mormon Church by an unknown person.)

a. James, born about 1844, Franklin County, VA. NFR.

b. Mary A., born 1847, married at age forty five to W. B. Blake a widower, age sixty November 24, 1891 at the Groves house in Kanawha County. NFR.

c. Agnes Patience, born 1849, named for her grandmother. NFR.

d. Benjamin Caleb, born about 1853, died November 12, 1928 at age seventy five of heart problems at Coal Fork, WV. Named for grandpa. He married Alice Filistia Durham October 14, 1880, by Rev. R. W. Moore. Alice was born April 6, 1857, died October 26, 1943 at age eighty six, at Central Avenue, Charleston, WV. She was the daughter of Jesse Durham and Priscilla Hunter. Benjamin was a miner.

d-1 Wilbert, born September 21, 1881, married Alinta Porter, May 1, 1902.

1-1 Frank Ray, born 9-12-1906, died 5-2-1990, at age eighty three a widower. NFR.


1-3 Sebert B. born 5-29-1911, died 7-9-1977 at age sixty six. First wife was Grace Webb. Second marriage to Kathleen Hively 3-17-1957?

Wilbert remarried to Alta Miller, June 15, 1918, lived in Clay County.
1-4 Bernard, born 10-2-1925.

1-5 Forest, born 7-17-1927.

d-2 Jesse Richard of Benjamin C. and Alice was born October 8, 1883, died 9-10-1963. Married Lura Stone 9-26-1906. Benjamin worked at Campbell's Creek and Cabin Creek as a miner.

2-1 Leslie E., born 1-2-1910, died 10-3-1952.


   2-1 Ruth Jeanene, born 1-1-1931, married Vincent Francis 5-5-1950.


   2-4 Ethelyn Nadine, born 1-17-1939.

   2-5 Wayne D. born 10-16-1943, married Donna S. Engell.

2-3 Marguerite E., of Jesse Richard, born 1921, married Robert M. Riggall 3-23-1942.

2-4 Mildred E., born 1923, married Ray A. Weeks 12-24-1940.

   2-5 Phyliss. NFR


   3-1 Adrin M., born 1914.


   3-3 Conrad Harold, born 9-3-1915, died 3-18-1993.


4-1 Howard Levon, born 5-22-1925.
4-2 Dardanella, born 2-4-1932.
4-3 Phillip Lloyd, born 2-20-1934.
4-5 Charles H. born 4-18-1893 at Claremont. Died 4-20-1962. First wife unknown. Second wife was Patti C. Lee, 6-6-1945. CA.
4-6 Virginia, born 4-9-1895, died 10-3-1987 at age ninety two. Never married. Lived on Central Avenue, Charleston, WV.
4-8 Zella Catherine, born 9-22-1900 at Cabin Creek. Married M. Edward Laity 10-27-1927, Atlanta, GA.

Benjamin Caleb at age seventy two was divorced and later married Maggie Nelson age fifty seven, a widow. Benjamin died November 12, 1928 at age seventy five at Coal Fork, WV.

e. Lucy of Preston, born 1858, married Alexander T. Martin May 5, 1878. NFR.

f. Mary A., of Preston, was born 1846, married W. B. Blake, widower, November 24, 1891.

Preston died August 8, 1892 at the age of seventy two. None of his descendents could be located at the present time.

It would interest me to know where Preston was buried and where his descendents are living at the present time.
Emily Halstead was born March 5, 1823, died May 14, 1861 at the age of thirty eight. Emily was probably the daughter of Benjamin. (Amos and John had left Indian Creek years earlier)

Emily grew up on Indian Creek and married George Alexander Mann February 11, 1845, Monroe County. Bondsmen were George and Adam Mann. George was the son of Jacob Mann, Jr., and Millie Ballard-Mann. The 1850 census of Monroe shows them living in the thirty nine and one half district, same area as Benjamin. George's brother Gholson Mann had married Nancy Halstead of John and Elizabeth.

From the Monroe Watchman: "George A. Mann and James Mann kept a tourist home and George was also in partnership with H. P. McNeer as tanners at Springfield".

Emily died young and is probably buried where the Mann's are buried.

   a-1 Etta F., born 1869.
   a-2 Ada S., born 1870.
   a-3 Margaret, born 1872.
   a-4 Wilbur L., born 1876.
   a-5 Mary M., born 1878.

b. Anna Elizabeth, born 1847, married John Thompson October 30, 1867. Marriage performed by P. B. Baber.

c. Mary F., born 1849, married Stewart A. Miller, November 3, 1869. Son of Samuel Miller.
   c-1 Levinia.
   c-2 Rosa.
   c-3 Cyrus N.

   d-1 George E.
   d-2 Amanda.
   d-3 Samuel R.
d-4 Charles.
d-5 Chris W.
d-6 William R.

John remarried to Lucretia Cook.

e. Martha Olivia, born about 1857, married Eli Baldwin Miller April 15, 1876. Son of William Carnifex Miller and Mary Thompson.

Marlene Nielson of Texas told me of George Mann's second family of whom she descends from. She said George married Ann Elizabeth Criner July 27, 1862 in Monroe County, performed by J. C. Hubbard. Ann a daughter of Samuel and Frances Criner. George died in 1891 at age sixty six. Children;

f. John Mann, born 1865.
g. Jacob, born 1866.
h. Joseph D., born 1868.
i. Emma.
j. George R. born 1875.
k. Samuel P. born 1878

**Marriage Bond for Emily Halstead and George Mann**

**Know all men by these presents,**

THAT we

George A. Mann

are held and firmly bound unto

The Commonwealth of Virginia,
in the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, current money, and for the payment of which, well and truly to be made to the said George A. Mann, in case the marriage between us, we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seals, and dated this 11th day of July 1845

The condition of the above obligation is such, That whereas a marriage is shortly to be had and solemnized, between the above bound,

Emily A. Mann

of the county of Monroe. If, therefore, there be no lawful cause or impediment to obstruct said marriage, then the above obligation to be void, otherwise to remain in full force and virtue.

Teste,

James Hutchinson

George Mann

Seal
Nancy, the youngest daughter of Benjamin was born November 28, 1822 and grew up on Quaking Asp Creek on land her father Benjamin inherited from his father, James. Nancy died April 26, 1906.

One of her descendents claims that Nancy fell in love with Caleb Toler who was working for Benjamin or helping him in some way on the farm. Benjamin gave Nancy his handwritten permission to marry, June 24, 1842, the marriage bond was issued the next day and they married July 7, 1842. Nancy's brother Amos was the surety bondsman. Caleb was born September 22, 1820, died March 13, 1902. Nancy died April 26, 1906. Nancy and Caleb are buried at Bluecreek near Millcreek.

Caleb's parents are unknown. The earliest Toler's in Greenbrier county was Oliver Towler, Esquire, who gave his written permission for his son Oliver to marry Agatha Lewis, December 28, 1793. Richard and Rachel-Sweeney-Toler lived at Oceana. After Richard died Rachel married Joseph Gore. Frances Toler, a widow lived in the very same area as Caleb and Nancy in the year of 1850. Frances may have been the mother of Caleb.

Caleb and Nancy probably farmed. They started their family and lived in the area of the 39½ district, same area as Benjamin and Frances Toler. This family had a sad life with the tragic deaths of most of their children from flux disease, diptheria and fever. Some dying within weeks of one another. Some are probably buried in the first Halstead cemetery on James farm, inherited by Benjamin. There were no gravestones. All the graves had wooden caskets.

Nancy and Caleb were living in the same household with Benjamin and Patience in the year of 1850 with three children. Benjamin had lost his property about 1846. Nancy's brother Lorenzo was also living in the same household. By 1860 Caleb and Nancy had moved to Millcreek, Kanawha County. In 1860 only Patience and Lorenzo were counted in the Monroe County census. Benjamin had died in 1856.

More children were born to Nancy and Caleb after the move to Millcreek. It appears that just a few years later the family moved to Nebraska, about the time the east-west railroad was built, about 1867. They lived at Arapahoe, Furnas County, Nebraska. No one can say why they went there, it was after the civil war ended.

Nancy's nephews Thomas and George, sons of her brother Mordicai were also living in Nebraska. People in some parts of Nebraska had to live in sod huts because of the shortage of trees and wood. After living there for some years they returned to their home at Millcreek where they lived out their lives. The family was counted in the 1880 Kanawha County census. Nancy's brother Preston had moved to Kanawha county and they must have visited each other. The Toler family bible had Preston's death date recorded.

Florence Toler of Millcreek answered my letter of inquiry and said she had married the grandson of Caleb and Nancy. She remembered their house as she had passed it on her way to school when she was a little girl. It was situated on a hill, was big and pretty with lots of trees and flowers in the yard. It is no longer there. Florence is a widow in her seventies and is still working. She was very helpful with some of the family history of Caleb and Nancy.
The following information for some of the children came from Florence and pages of the Toler family bible. She didn't know the names of all of their grandchildren. The information regarding their son Jeremiah Jeter came from Mrs. Brown, a researcher for the Genealogical Society of Beaver City, Nebraska who was kind enough to answer my letter of inquiry and sent me what she found.

a. Sarah, the first daughter was born 1843 on Indian Creek. She died September 7, 1855 of the flux disease at age eleven. May be buried in the first Halstead cemetery.

b. Louisa, born October 6, 1844, died May 26, 1906 at Indian Creek. She grew up and married Enoch Hunter March 1868 in Kanawha County.

   b-1 James Hunter, had three sons.

      1-1 Brooks
      1-2 Arch
      1-3 Harold

   b-2 William

      2-1 Gladys
      2-2 Oren

   b-3 Fred, birthdate unknown, died November 2, 1937. Married Cordelia Litton. Cordelia died March 19, 1952. They are buried in Whippo Hollow, Kanawha County.

      3-1 Audrey Lowell (Al), married Georgia Shamblin June 1952.
          1-1 Ike Hunter, born June 1953.

      3-2 Alford, married Mary Prouse. Thirteen children. Unknown.

      3-3 Lillian, never married. Died of cancer 1951.

Fred, Cordelia, A. Lowell, Alford and Lillian are buried in the family cemetery behind Lowell and Georgia's house on Hunter Road.

   b-4 Wilbur.

      4-1 Sherman
      4-2 Samuel
      4-3 Amon

   b-5 Nicholas, never married. He was killed in a mine on Millcreek.

c. Emily, born 1847, died August 30, 1855 of flux disease at seven. Buried on Indian Creek.
d. James M. Toler was born April 7, 1850, Monroe County at Indian Creek. He died June 25, 1934. Married Cora Mae Litton, June 6, 1900, Gallia County, Ohio. Cora Mae was born February 27, 1882 at Gay, WV. James sold his farm on Millcreek to buy a team of horses so he could deliver mail up Elk River. James and Cora are buried in Whippo Hollow.

d-1 Fred Toler, died November 2, 1936. Killed on an oil rig. Buried on Blue Creek, Kanawha County. Married Ethyl Young.

1-1 Opal-Chapman
1-2 Pansy-Faulkner
1-3 Stanley. Never married.

d-2 Joseph, went west. Returned and lived on Blue Creek.

d-3 Dennis Toler, born May 29, 1907. Died October 31, 1983. He was a WW II veteran. A shoe repairman. He married Florence Pierson April 10, 1944 at Charleston. Florence was born October 20, 1918 at Pt. Pleasant. Dennis is buried at Elk Hills Memorial Park at Big Chimney, WV.

3-1 Patricia Jean, born 9-10-1946.
3-2 Leona Mae, born 4-5-1948.


4-1 Emma
4-2 Myrtle
4-3 Ervin
4-4 Robert Lee
4-5 Jerry


d-6 Richard Toler, born August 15, 1921. He was a Baptist preacher. Air Force-WW II. His plane was shot down over the English Channel and he was killed March 28, 1944. Not married.

d-7 There was a child named Lilly who died January 22, 1896.

e. William Henry was born March 20, 1852, on Indian Creek. He died November 17, 1861 of diptheria at the age of nine or ten.

f. Allen Thomas, born September 14, 1855, died 1916.
g. Erastus Allen, born 1853, died October 15, 1855 of flux disease. One year old. Buried on Indian Creek.

h. Jeremiah Jeter "JJ" was born May 10, 1858 on Millcreek, Kanawha County, WV. Died December 1899, Bertrand, Nebraska.

After Jeremiah returned to Millcreek from Nebraska with his parents he decided in a few years to return to Nebraska, 1882. He was about twenty four. He married Laura Susanna Horton of Furnas County, Nebraska, September 3rd, 1887. Laura was the daughter of Cyrus Horton and born May 22, 1867, Ontario, Canada. Laura lived to be eighty eight, died May 3, 1956. She had four brothers and five sisters. She came west with her parents traveling by ox teams and they homesteaded at Arapahoe.

Laura and Jeremiah were the parents of eight children. Their last baby was a few days old and died the same day as Jeremiah of typhoid fever, December 3, 1899, at Hastings. Jeremiah was forty two. They are buried in the Arapahoe County cemetery, block E.

Laura made her home with her son Cliff at Benkleman the last days of her life. She is buried beside her husband and children. She was a member of the Christian Church of Arapahoe. There are twenty three grandchildren, forty five great grandchildren and five great, great grandchildren.

The Horton ancestors go back to Jonathan Horton and wife Bethia Wells to 1648. Found in the LDS Ancestral Files, Family History Library.

h-1 Alma Rose, born June 23, 1888. Married William Frederick Toler, February 25, 1908, son of Fidel and Louisa Fallert. They lived at Benkelman, Nebraska. William was born March 26th 1884. He was for a time in the meat marketing business, later engaged in carpenter and construction, built many fine homes and buildings in the community. They had eleven children, six great grandchildren. Children:

1-1 Valeeta
1-2 Dale
1-3 Beryl
1-4 Bonnie

Perhaps there are some descendents of Alma and William Fallert still living somewhere in Nebraska.

h-2 Clyde Erie Toler, born December 3, 1889, died November 22, 1967. He married Ruth Waller and lived at Twin Falls, Idaho. There were several children, only one is known.


h-4 Vera Louise, born May 11, 1893. Married a Pickering and moved to Coulee Dam, Washington.

h-5 Elsie Viola, born December 6, 1894, Arapahoe, Nebraska. Married a Ballard and lived at Loveland, Colorado.


h-7 Beulah-Childress, born 1898, lived in North Hollywood, CA. Their baby died December 3, 1899.

i. Samuel L. Toler, born March 10, 1861, died February 26, 1883, age twenty two of fever.

j. Joseph H. born May 10, 1863, died September 21, 1882, age nineteen, of fever.

k. Ellen Catherine, born February 20, 1868, died September 8, 1876 of diptheria at age eight.

l. Alice Toler, born February 18, 1870, died September 1, 1876 of diptheria, at age of six.

This concludes the family of Caleb and Nancy Toler. Amos Halstead was Nancy's brother.

**KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS,**

**THAT we Caleb Toler**

are held and firmly bound unto **John M. Gregory, Governor of Virginia,** in the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars, current money, and for the payment of which, well and truly to be made to the said Governor and his successors in office, we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors and administrators, jointly and severally, firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seals, and dated this 25th day of January, 1842.

**The condition of the above obligation is such,** that whereas a marriage is shortly to be had and solemnized, between the above bound Caleb Toler and Nancy Halstead of the county of Monroe. If, therefore, there be no lawful cause or impediment to obstruct said marriage, then the above obligation to be void, otherwise to remain in full force and virtue.

**Tails,**

[Signatures]
Nancy Halstead Toler, daughter of Benjamin and Patience Roles. She appears to be blind in the right eye. Picture is from Ike Hunter.

Below is Dennis Toler, grandson of Nancy and Caleb, his wife Florence and daughters Patricia and Leona.
Lorenzo Dow was the last child born to Patience and Benjamin, in 1829. John Q. Adams and Andrew Jackson were the Presidents that year. The date of his death is unknown and no one could say where he was buried.

Lorenzo Dow was a very popular name at that time because a popular and charismatic preacher named Lorenzo Dow was traveling through the country preaching and captivating the women's hearts. Many families had a Lorenzo Dow. "Lorenzy" as he was called was twenty seven when his father Benjamin died. He and his mother continued to live and were counted in the same household in 1860 Monroe County census. The following year Lorenzo enlisted in the Confederate army. His mother is never mentioned again in the records of Monroe or any other county. She may have lived with one of her children during the war years. She was seventy eight when Lorenzo left if she was still living. (No records were kept during the war years)

The war records show that Lorenzo enlisted August 20, 1861, by Col. B. Suttle at Red Sulphur, Company B, of the 166th Regiment, along with his cousin John Halstead. By March 26th, 1862 he and his cousin were enlisted into Co. C of the 30th Battalion at Union. They became Monroe Sharpshooters in Vawter's Company. Vawter was despised by his men. All of Lorenzo's cousins and other kin enlisted into the Confederate army.

Lorenzo's company was encamped on Indian Creek, September 6, 1862. The archive records show that he was absent in May and June of 1863, for detailed duty in Monroe County to "arrest deserters". Another record says that he was sick from May to December 1863. Perhaps the real reason is unknown. His mother may have died. His older brother Mordicai was wounded and died in the battle at Dry Creek, Lewisburg, September 17, 1863.

The country was suffering from hunger and disease. Typhoid and smallpox were an epidemic, soldiers were ragged, barefoot and half starved. Food, when there was some was rotten and full of maggots. Flour cost one thousand dollars a barrel, butter was twenty dollars a pound and one chicken cost fifty dollars. Lorenzo's pay was eleven dollars a month if he got paid at all. The winters were very cold and at one time the animals froze to death.

The 30th was engaged in a battle at Cedar Creek, October 19, 1864, which moved out at 5:30 in the morning. That morning, Early in a surprise attack seized the camp of two of Sheridan's Corps. Sheridan arriving early in the morning had rallied his troops and defeated Early in an afternoon counter attack. This was the last major threat to control in the Shenandoah valley. Lorenzo was injured in the battle, many died and some sent to "Lincoln's hotels". Lorenzo was sent to the Staunton General Hospital and records show that he was still there December 14, 1864 months after the battle, indicating that his injuries were extensive.
During this battle 1900 were killed, 1000 wounded. In his company, C. L. 
Skaggs died, James Comer was buried at Finn's Point National cemetary, New 
Jersey. Comer was one of four brothers, two of whom perished in prison, one 
escaped and was captured and paroled at Charleston. Included in the 30th were 
fifteen Mann's, nine Lilly's, four Ellison's, three Cummings, three Broyles, four 
Pence's, ten Miller's, two Wiseman's, Christopher Tolley, Felix Shumate and 
hundreds of others from Monroe County and surrounding areas. (From The 30th 
Battalion of Virginia Sharpshooters, by M. West) This book details all the battles, 
hardships and horrors of the 30th and what happened to many of the men after 
the war and includes pictures of some of the men.

Lorenzo was paroled in Charleston, May 12, 1865. Archive records describe him 
as age 36, five foot eleven inches, blue eyes, brown hair and could write. Some 
think he was alive in 1916. He is not mentioned in any records of Monroe 
County after the war. He was not married, had no property and was left nothing 
by his father. Perhaps he was handicapped by his injuries and living at the old 
soldiers home at Richmond.

We can be proud of our ancestors and pioneer grandfathers who struggled to make 
life better for their family and children, suffering untold hardships and the 
misery of wars.

This concludes the family and descendents of James Halstead, pioneer of Indian 
Creek, Virginia, West Virginia.

As the Twenty First Century begins in five months we are living in a different 
era than the last one. Our grandchildren will not know much about the simple, 
quiet unhurried lives of my generation which I think was the best of times. Morals 
and faith were important, girls were modest and always wore dresses. Work 
was hard because modern appliances had not been invented and we were 
entertained by radios and phonographs. People were into social gatherings and 
everyone knew their neighbors, few people locked their doors.

The world was very large when I was young and foreign countries were far away. 
After the second world war people started traveling to other countries and the world 
became smaller. The native dress of other countries has become westernized and 
English is being spoken worldwide.

During my lifetime we have been involved in about nine wars-some small, some 
large and have had twelve Presidents beginning with Herbert Hoover during the 
great depression that started with the crash of the stock market in 1929. Many 
dreadful diseases such as polio, smallpox, diptheria and tuberculosis have been 
eradicated. Birth control in the 1960's made for smaller families. We traveled into 
outer space, walked on the moon and became computerized. Technology has 
progressed by leaps and bounds and will be more so in the next century and our 
great grandchildren may look back on our time as the dark ages. I was more 
comfortable with old ways and a slower way of life even when we were not 
so prosperous. This is still the best country to live in because many generations 
of our soldiers fought and died making it so.
BIBLIOGRAPHY


Valley of Virginia in the Revolution. By Freeman H. Hart.

Virginias Colonial Soldiers. By Lloyd DeWitt Bockstruck.


The Patriots. By A. J. Langguth.


West Virginia Revolutionary War Ancestors. By Anne Waller Reddy.

The Spirit of Seventy-Six as told by participants, Edited by Henry Seele Commager and Richard B. Morris.

The South in the American Revolution. By Lucien Agniel.

Rebels and Redcoats. By George F. Sheer and Hugh F. Rankin.

Loyalists in the Southern Campaign of the Revolutionary War. By Murtie June Clark.

Loyalists in the American Revolution. By Claude Halstead Van Tyne.

The Soldiery of West Virginia. By Virgil A. Lewis, MA.


Indian Warfare and Massacres of the West Virginia Frontier. Written and Compiled by Dale Payne.


History of Indian Creek Primitive Baptist Church, Greenville, WV. and Related Churches of West Virginia. By Elder Norvel P. Mann.
History of Monroe County, WV. By Oren F. Morton, B. Lit.

History of Greenbrier County. By Otis Rice.

The Great Kanawha Valley. By John P. Hale.

Raleigh County. By Jim Wood.

Greenbrier County Records, WV. Transcribed by Larry G. Shuck, Vol. II.

History of Early Settlement and Indian Wars of West Virginia. By Wills De Hass.


History of Southwest Virginia, 1746-1780, Washington County 1777-1870. By Lewis Preston Summers.


History of Summers County. By James H. Miller.

Transallegheny Pioneers. By John P. Hale.

Statutes at Large. By Henning.


Index to Draper Manuscripts. By Lymon Draper.

History of Tazwell County and Southwest Virginia. By Judge Wm. C. Pendleton.


Greenbrier Court Orders. By Helen Stinson.

The 22nd Virginia Infantry. By Terry D. Lowrey.


The Gauley, Mercer and Western Artillery. By Michael West.

The 30th Battalion of Virginia Sharpshooter's. By Michael West.

Thurmond's Partisan Rangers and Swann's Battalion of Virginia Artillery. By Jerry C. Weaver.

Crucial Land Battles. By David L. Phillips.

The Civil War in Fayette County, By Tim McKinley.
The Miller Family, By Everette Miller.  (LDS Microfilm # 1017648)
The Ballard Family, By Dr. Margaret Ballard.
The Ramsey Family, By James Ramsey.
Historical Footprints, By Pauline Haga.
List of Colonial Soldiers of Virginia, By H. J. Eckenrode.

These books are in libraries and some on microfilms.
ADDENDA

1. The rest of the story regarding Henry "Beecher" Halstead, son of Jacob and Margaret Halstead and picture of "Beecher" with his grandson Erle Wendell Halstead. (see page 56). Information and picture from Douglas Halstead, son of Erle Wendell Halstead.

2. Additional pictures from the family album of Henry Halstead given by his granddaughter Roxanne Marcum-Woods (#6, page 102).

   Top: Emily Keatley-Halstead and sons Christopher and Green.
   Bottom: Frank Halstead and his mother Roxalana Snuffer-Halstead and Celia Halstead-Thompson, Emily's daughter.


Dee Wheaton, 5-2001
Douglas Ward Halstead, a young man in Idaho is the great grandson of Henry Halstead and great, great grandson of Jacob and Elizabeth Halstead. Douglas has been gathering his family history and was unaware that his ancestors came from West Virginia. Recently, he learned about the book about James Halstead, Pioneer of Indian Creek from the Internet and ordered one. He has sent me his family history that he knows of — descendants of his great grandfather Henry Halstead who is mentioned on page 56 of the James Halstead book.

Thanks to Douglas we now know "the rest of the story" about Henry after he moved to Greenup, KY., sometime after the civil war.

DW
Henry of Jacob was born June 1840. Enlisted in Captain Lowrey’s Centerville Riffles June 8, 1861 at Indian Creek. Transferred to Chapman’s Battery May 1, 1864 by the order of Brig. General William E. Jones (Archives). Henry was a Stonemason by 1870 living in a boarding home in Greenup, Ky. He married Elizabeth Patton, born 9-13-1841 of Lawrence Co. Ohio. Henry died _______ and is buried at Wurtland, Ky., which is near Greenup and Portsmouth, Ohio.

g-1 Henry Ward Beecher Halstead, born 8-1877, Greenup, Ky. died March 20, 1940 of influenza at Sciotoville, OH. Buried in Wheelersburg Cemetery. He married Frances A. Campbell 9-10-1898. Frances was born 1878, died 1973. Henry was employed at Portsmouth’s Wheeling Steel Corporation, Engineer.

Children: Orlando, Ruth, Frances, Ward Campbell, Earle Wilson & Jack W.

1-1 Orlando, born 1900, died 1903.
1-2 Ruth, born 3-28, 1902, died May 10, 1902 of pneumonia.

3-1 Franciel Ackroyd


4-1 Mark Beecher, died at age nineteen. (adopted)

Ward Campbell was a psychologist and educator. Attended Miami University, Oxford, Ohio, graduated A. B., Ohio University, A. M. 1931, Ohio State Univ., PH. D. Northwestern University 1935. Became instructor of experimental psychology at Northwestern’s Department of Medicine. Assistant Professor 1943, Professor 1946 until his death. At the time of his death, Director of Laboratory of Medical Psychology. Visiting Professor of Psychology at Univ. of Los Angeles, CA. 1947, Berkeley in 1949. AT the University of Chicago he sponsored fifteen candidates for Doctor of Philosophy degrees. His main interest was the human brain, particularly the frontal lobes and became internationally known for research in higher brain functions. Established the worlds first laboratory devoted to brain functions known as "Halsteads Laboratory of Medical Psychology", representing his interests in neuropsychological aspects of neurosurgery, communicable diseases and endocrinology. He and Joseph Katz proposed the first formal theory on the biochemistry of learning and memory, developing "Halstead's Battery of Neuropsychological Tests", used in major medical psychology centers. Also carried out research on high altitude psychophysiology and neuropsychological effects of brain injuries for the U. S., Army and Army Air Force, WW II. Consultant to the Surgeon General 1952 to 54 and the Department of Navy 1953 to 1955 and technical consultant to Veterans Hospital at Downey, IL. Attended several Congress’s on psychology: in Canada 1954, Belgium 1957, Italy 1957, California 1960 and Denmark 1963. Author of "Brain and Intelligence", co author of "Neurological and Psychological Effects of Cerebral Injuries" and "Brain Injuries and Higher Levels of Consciousness in Trauma and the Central Nervous System". Authored and co authored many books.

1-5 Earle Wilson, born 4-9-1912, Portsmouth, OH, died 7-12-1996, Idaho. Married Hilda Thelma Jenkins 1-14-1934. Lived at________ Employed (or occupation) __________ Divorced.


1-1 Jachary Erik, born 2-16-1988, Austin, TX. Married Leigh Glass 12-30-1998, Austin, TX.

1-2 Carolyn Annette, born 4-26-1963, Minot, ND. Married Stephen F. Hosek 12-10-1988, Austin, TX.

2-1 Megan Allyce, born 7-12-1991, Austin, TX.
2-2 Mathew Garrett, born 10-7-1992, Austin, TX.
2-3 Sarah Morgan, born 9-16-1994, Austin, TX.

1-3 Robbin Lynn, born 3-25-1965, Wiesbaden, W. Germany


Earle Wilson remarried to Janet Joy Thompson 12-26-1942

5-2 Larry Halstead, born 12-4-1947, Detroit, MI. Married and divorced.

2-1 Elizabeth Ann, born 8-2-1978, St. Petersburg, FL.
2-1 Ryan, born 1979, St. Petersburg, FL.
2-3 Katherine Marie, born 2-27-1981, St. Petersburg, FL.

5-3 Jerry Halstead, born 7-30-1953, Dallas, TX. Married Patricia Ann Schlotterlein 6-19-1976, St. Petersburg, FL.

3-1 Mathew Erle, born 8-8-1983, St. Petersburg, FL.
3-2 Emmerson Ward, born 1-20-1986, St. Petersburg, FL.
1-6 Jack Wendell, born 1922. Living. Married to ______________________. Children:

   6-1 ______________________
   6-2 ______________________
   6-3 ______________________

g-2 Minerva Halstead, daughter of Henry, of Jacob was born 7-11-1882. She married Marion Ferguson 2-23-1898. They lived at Ironton, OH.

   2-1 Victoria, born 8-16-1899, died 11-1-1900.
   2-2 Harvey, born 2-6-1901, died 4-23-1986. Buried Buckeye Cemetery, Scioto Co. OH.
   2-3 Ida Mae, born 1-16-1904, now living in her nineties.
   2-4 Elizabeth, born 3-9-1906, now living in her nineties. Married a Botkins.
   2-5 Henry Beacher, born 8-22-1907, died 6-29-1934.
   2-6 Minnie O., born 1-26-1910, died 1995, Ironton, OH.
   2-7 John, born 6-9-1912, died 9-1-1991, FL. Buried in Michigan Memorial Park, Flatrock, MI.
   2-8 William B., born 1-23-1915, died 7-19-1981, Minneapolis, MN.
   2-9 Lenna D., born 6-23-1917. Living. Married a Frailey.
   2-10 Marion D., born 8-16-1919, died Ironton, OH. Buried at Woodland cemetery.

This concludes the family of Henry Halstead, of Jacob.

(From Douglas Halstead-2-2000)
Henry Ward Beecher Halstead, son of Henry Halstead of Jacob Halstead.

With his grandson Earle Wendell Halstead, father of Douglas W. Halstead.

Family history and picture from Douglas W. Halstead of Idaho.
Emily Halstead, sons Christopher and Green
Frank and Roxalana Halstead-Celia Thompson